



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

THE  
NEW TESTAMENT

OF OUR  
LORD AND SAVIOR JESUS CHRIST.

THE COMMON ENGLISH VERSION, CORRECTED BY THE FINAL  
COMMITTEE OF THE AMERICAN BIBLE UNION.

---

NEW YORK :  
AMERICAN BIBLE UNION.  
1862.

---

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1862, by  
THE AMERICAN BIBLE UNION,  
In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States for the  
Southern District of New York.

---

~~~~~  
HOLMAN, Printer,  
Cor. Centre and White Streets, N. Y.

## TO THE READER.

It is the object of the following revised version of the Gospels, to give a faithful expression of the meaning of the Sacred Text; and to do this, as far as is possible, in the words of the common English version.

The Committee of Revisers have kept in mind, that their work is intended for the use of the common reader; and that many of the nicer distinctions of idiom and phraseology, which are appropriate in a version for the learned, or for use in the lecture-room, would be out of place here.

In accordance with the object of the Society, for whose use this revision is prepared, to obtain a true and faithful rendering of the inspired text, the words which express the initiatory rite of the Christian Church are rendered by their literal equivalents, as was done by Luther and others, in the versions from the Greek into the vernacular languages of the continent of Europe.

It is proper to say, that there is a difference of opinion among the members of the Committee, in regard to the substitution of 'the Immerser' for 'the Baptist.' In the view of a part of the Committee, if the verb which expresses the Christian rite is translated, the official title derived from it should be translated also. Others object to this as an inconsistency, in a revision which transfers other official titles (as 'the Christ,' instead of 'the Anointed'), and as leading to confusion and inconvenience, by substituting new and unknown names of historical personages, for those by which they are universally known in English usage. This word, though employed in this edition, is subject to further consideration by the Committee.

The Committee have aimed to exhibit, in their revision, the characteristic manner of each evangelist; following the true reading in each where they have been assimilated to one another in the later manuscripts, and giving the true rendering where they have been improperly assimilated, or made to differ, in the common version. The independent testimony of each inspired witness is thus presented to the reader unimpaired.

Owing to the shortness of the time allowed for preparing this revision of the Gospels, and the distance at which the members of the Committee reside from each other, rendering consultation difficult, they have found it necessary to reserve their decision on some questions which are still under consideration. These questions, for the most part, relate to points of expression merely, and not to the meaning of the text.

An Appendix is added to some copies, for those who may desire it, showing the true text from the oldest manuscripts, followed in this revision.

# THE GOSPEL

ACCORDING TO

## M A T T H E W.

### CHAPTER I.

Book of the generation of Jesus Christ, son 1  
of David, son of Abraham. Abraham begat Isaac ; 2  
and Isaac begat Jacob ; and Jacob begat Judah and  
his brethren ; and Judah begat Pharez and Zarah, 3  
of Tamar ; and Pharez begat Hezron ; and Hezron  
begat Ram ; and Ram begat Aminadab ; and Amin- 4  
adab begat Nahshon ; and Nahshon begat Salmon ;  
and Salmon begat Boaz, of Rahab ; and Boaz be- 5  
gat Obed, of Ruth ; and Obed begat Jesse ; and  
Jesse begat David the King ; and David the King 6  
begat Solomon, of the wife of Uriah ; and Solomon 7  
begat Rehoboam ; and Rehoboam begat Abia ; and  
Abia begat Asa ; and Asa begat Jehoshaphat ; 8  
and Jehoshaphat begat Joram ; and Joram begat  
Uzziah ; and Uzziah begat Jotham ; and Jotham 9  
begat Ahaz ; and Ahaz begat Hezekiah ; and Heze- 10  
kiah begat Manasseh ; and Manasseh begat Amon ;

---

V. 6. *In the oldest copies :* and David begat

A .

1

MATTHEW.

- 11 and Amon begat Josiah; and Josiah begat Jeconiah and his brethren, at the time of the removal  
12 to Babylon. And after the removal to Babylon, Jeconiah begat Salathiel; and Salathiel begat Zerubbabel;  
13 and Zerubbabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor; and  
14 Azor begat Zadock; and Zadock begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; and Eliud begat Eleazar;  
15 and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of  
16 Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.  
17 So all the generations from Abraham unto David are fourteen generations; and from David unto the removal to Babylon, fourteen generations; and from the removal to Babylon unto the Christ, fourteen generations.
- 18 Now the birth of Jesus Christ was after this manner. His mother Mary being betrothed to Joseph, before they came together she was found with child  
19 of the Holy Spirit. Then Joseph her husband, being just, and not willing to expose her openly, desired to put her away privately. But while he  
20 thought on these things, behold an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream, saying: Joseph, son of David, fear not to take to thee Mary thy wife; for that which is begotten in her is of the Holy  
21 Spirit. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou

---

V. 19. *In some ancient copies: to make her an example*

## CHAPTER II.

shalt call his name Jesus ; for he shall save his people from their sins.

Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled 22 which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying : Behold the virgin shall be with child, and 23 shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Immanuel ; which is interpreted, God with us.

And Joseph, awaking from sleep, did as the angel 24 of the Lord had bidden him, and took to him his wife ; and he knew her not till she had brought 25 forth a son ; and he called his name Jesus.

II. Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of 1 Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, saying : 2 Where is he that is born King of the Jews ? For we saw his star in the east, and have come to do him homage. When Herod the king heard it, he was 3 troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. And when 4 he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he inquired of them where the Christ should be born. And they said to him, In 5 Bethlehem of Judea ; for thus it is written by the prophet : And thou Bethlehem, land of Judah, art 6 in no wise least among the princes of Judah ; for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel. Then Herod having secretly 7

---

V. 23. *Or* : which interpreted is

V. 25. *In some ancient copies* : her first-born son



MATTHEW.

- called the wise men, inquired of them exactly the  
8 time when the star appeared. And he sent them to  
Bethlehem, and said : Go and inquire strictly con-  
cerning the child ; and when ye have found him, bring  
me word again, that I also may come and do him  
9 homage. When they had heard the king, they de-  
parted ; and lo, the star, which they saw in the  
east, went before them, till it came and stood over  
10 where the young child was. When they saw the  
11 star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. And  
when they were come into the house, they saw the  
young child with Mary his mother, and fell down,  
and did homage to him ; and opening their treas-  
ures, they presented to him gifts, gold and frankin-  
12 cense and myrrh. And being warned of God in a  
dream, that they should not return to Herod, they  
departed into their own country by another way.
- 13 And when they had departed, behold, an angel of  
the Lord appears to Joseph in a dream, saying :  
Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and  
flee into Egypt, and be there until I bring thee  
word ; for Herod will seek the young child to de-  
14 stroy him. And he arose and took the young child  
and his mother by night and departed into Egypt,  
15 and was there until the death of Herod ; that it  
might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord  
through the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I  
called my son.
- 16 Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked

### CHAPTER III.

by the wise men, was exceeding wroth ; and he sent forth, and slew all the male children that were in Bethlehem, and in all its borders, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had exactly learned from the wise men. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken through Jeremiah the prophet, saying : A voice was heard in Ramah, weeping, and great mourning ; Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not. 17 18

But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appears in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying ; Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel ; for they are dead who sought the young child's life. And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. But when he heard that Archelaus reigned in Judea in the room of Herod his father, he was afraid to go thither ; and being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee. And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth ; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken through the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene. 19 20 21 22 23

III. In those days came John the Immerser, preaching in the wilderness of Judea, and saying : Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. 1 2

---

V. 18. *In some ancient copies* : lamentation and weeping

## MATTHEW.

3 For this is he that was spoken of through the prophet Isaiah, saying : The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare the way of the Lord, make  
4 straight his paths. And he, John, had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins ; and his food was locusts and wild honey.

5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and  
6 all the region about the Jordan, and were immersed  
7 ed by him in the Jordan, confessing their sins. But  
when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees  
coming to his immersion, he said to them : Brood  
of vipers, who has warned you to flee from the com-  
8 ing wrath ? Bring forth therefore fruit meet for  
9 repentance ; and think not to say within yourselves,  
We have Abraham for our father ; for I say to you,  
that God is able of these stones to raise up children  
10 to Abraham. And now the axe is laid to the root  
of the trees ; therefore every tree that brings not  
forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.  
11 I indeed immerse you in water unto repentance ; but  
he that comes after me is mightier than I, whose  
sandals I am not worthy to bear ; he will immerse  
12 you in the Holy Spirit and fire. Whose fan is in  
his hand, and he will thoroughly cleanse his thresh-  
ing-floor, and will gather his wheat into the garner ;  
but the chaff he will burn up with fire unquenchable.  
13 Then Jesus comes from Galilee to the Jordan to  
14 John, to be immersed by him. But John sought to  
hinder him, saying : I have need to be immersed by

## CHAPTER IV.

thee, and dost thou come to me? And Jesus answering said to him : Suffer it now ; for thus it becomes us to fulfill all righteousness. Then he suffered him. And Jesus, when he was immersed, went up straightway from the water ; and lo, the heavens were opened to him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending, as a dove, and coming upon him. And lo, a voice out of heaven, saying : This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

IV. THEN was Jesus led up by the Spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted by the Devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he afterwards hungered. And the tempter came, and said to him : If thou art the Son of God, command that these stones become bread. But he answered and said : It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God.

Then the Devil takes him up into the holy city, and sets him on the pinnacle of the temple, and says to him : If thou art the Son of God, cast thyself down ; for it is written, He shall give his angels command concerning thee ; and on their hands they shall bear thee up, lest haply thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus said to him : Again it is written, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

Again the Devil takes him up into an exceeding high mountain, and shows him all the kingdoms of

## MATTHEW.

- 9 the world, and the glory of them ; and says to him :  
All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall  
10 down and worship me. Then Jesus says to him :  
Get thee hence, Satan ; for it is written : Thou  
shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt  
11 thou serve. Then the Devil leaves him ; and behold,  
angels came and ministered to him.
- 12 And hearing that John was delivered up, he re-  
13 tired into Galilee. And leaving Nazareth, he  
came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is by the sea,  
14 in the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali. That it  
might be fulfilled which was spoken through Isaiah  
15 the prophet, saying : The land of Zebulun, and the  
land of Naphtali, by the way of the sea, beyond the  
16 Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles ; the people that sat  
in darkness saw great light ; and to them that sat in  
the region and shadow of death light is sprung up.
- 17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to  
say : Repent ; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.
- 18 And walking by the sea of Galilee, he saw two  
brothers, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his  
brother, casting a net into the sea ; for they were  
19 fishers. And he says to them : Come after me, and  
20 I will make you fishers of men. And they straight-  
21 way left their nets, and followed him. And going  
on from thence, he saw other two brothers, James  
the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the  
ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets ;

## CHAPTER V.

and he called them. And they immediately left 22  
the ship and their father, and followed him.

And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in 23  
their synagogues, and preaching the good news of  
the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every  
infirmity among the people. And his fame went forth 24  
into all Syria ; and they brought to him all that were  
sick, taken with divers diseases and torments, and  
possessed with devils, and lunatic, and palsied ; and  
he healed them. And great multitudes followed him 25  
from Galilee, and Decapolis, and Jerusalem, and  
Judea, and from beyond the Jordan.

V. AND seeing the multitudes, he went up into the 1  
mountain ; and when he had sat down, his disciples  
came to him. And he opened his mouth, and taught 2  
them, saying :

Happy the poor in spirit ; for theirs is the king- 3  
dom of heaven.

Happy they that mourn ; for they shall be com- 4  
forted.

Happy the meek ; for they shall inherit the earth. 5

Happy they that hunger and thirst after right- 6  
eousness ; for they shall be filled.

Happy the merciful ; for they shall obtain mercy. 7

Happy the pure in heart ; for they shall see God. 8

Happy the peacemakers ; for they shall be called 9  
sons of God.

---

V. 5. *or*, the land

MATTHEW.

- 10 Happy they that are persecuted for righteousness' sake ; for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
- 11 Happy are ye, when they shall revile and persecute you, and shall say all evil against you falsely, for  
12 my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad ; because great is your reward in heaven, for so persecuted they the prophets that were before you.
- 13 Ye are the salt of the earth ; but if the salt has lost its savor, wherewith shall it be salted ? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.
- 14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set  
15 on a hill can not be hid. Nor do they light a lamp and put it under the bushel, but on the lightstand ;  
16 and it shines to all that are in the house. So let your light shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in heaven.
- 17 Think not that I have come to destroy the law, or the prophets ; I have not come to destroy, but  
18 to fulfill. For verily I say to you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall not pass from  
19 the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven ; but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

---

V. 11. *Some ancient copies omit* falsely.

## CHAPTER V.

For I say to you, that except your righteousness 20 shall exceed that of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

Ye have heard that it was said to them of old 21 time : Thou shalt not kill ; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment. But I say to 22 you, that whosoever is angry with his brother, without cause, shall be in danger of the judgment ; and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council ; and whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire. There- 23 fore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother has aught against thee ; leave there thy gift before the altar, and go, first be 24 reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou 25 art in the way with him ; lest haply the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say to thee, thou shalt not come 26 out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

Ye have heard that it was said : Thou shalt not 27 commit adultery. But I say to you, that whoever 28

---

V. 21. *or, by them*

V. 22. *without cause is omitted in many ancient copies.*

*ib.* Raca, *a term of angry reproach.*



MATTHEW.

looks on a woman to lust after her, has committed  
29 adultery with her already in his heart. And if thy  
right eye causes thee to offend, pluck it out and cast  
it from thee ; for it is profitable for thee that one of  
thy members should perish, and not that thy whole  
30 body should be cast into hell. And if thy right  
hand causes thee to offend, cut it off and cast it from  
thee ; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy  
members should perish, and not that thy whole body  
should be cast into hell.

31 And it was said : Whosoever shall put away his  
wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement.  
32 But I say to you, that whosoever shall put away his  
wife, save for the cause of fornication, makes her  
commit adultery ; and whosoever shall marry her  
when put away, commits adultery.

33 Again ye have heard, that it was said to them of  
old time : Thou shalt not swear falsely, but shalt  
34 perform to the Lord thine oaths. But I say to you,  
swear not at all ; neither by heaven, for it is God's  
35 throne ; nor by the earth, for it is his footstool ; nor  
by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King.  
36 Nor shalt thou swear by thy head ; because thou  
37 canst not make one hair white or black. But let  
your word be, Yea, yea, Nay, nay ; for whatsoever  
is more than these comes of evil.

38 Ye have heard that it was said : An eye for an  
39 eye, and a tooth for a tooth. But I say to you,

## CHAPTER VI.

that ye resist not evil ; but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take thy 40 coat, let him have thy cloak also. And whosoever 41 shall compel thee to go one mile, go with him two. Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that 42 would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

Ye have heard that it was said : Thou shalt love 43 thy neighbor, and hate thine enemy. But I say 44 to you, love your enemies, and pray for them that persecute you. That ye may be sons of your 45 Father who is in heaven ; for he causes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the just and the unjust. For if ye love them that love 46 you, what reward have ye ? Do not also the publicans the same ? And if ye salute your brethren 47 only, what do ye that excels ? Do not also the heathen thus ? Be ye therefore perfect, even as your 48 Father who is in heaven is perfect.

VI. TAKE heed that ye do not your righteousness 1 before men, to be seen by them ; otherwise ye have no reward of your Father who is in heaven. There- 2 fore when thou doest alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say to you, they have in full their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand 3 know what thy right hand doeth. That thine alms 4

MATTHEW.

may be in secret ; and thy Father who seeth in secret will himself reward thee.

- 5 And when ye pray, ye shall not be as the hypocrites ; for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen by men. Verily I say to you, they  
6 have in full their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father who is in secret ; and thy Father who seeth in secret will reward thee.  
7 But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do ; for they think that they shall be  
8 heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like to them ; for your Father knows what things  
9 ye have need of, before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye :

Our Father who art in heaven, hallowed be thy name.

- 10 Thy kingdom come ; thy will be done, as in heaven, so also on the earth.  
11 Give us this day our daily bread.  
12 And forgive us our debts, as also we forgive our debtors.  
13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.  
14 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly  
15 only Father will also forgive you ; but if ye forgive

---

V. 11. *Or*, our needful bread

## CHAPTER VI.

not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

And when ye fast, be not as the hypocrites, of 16  
a sad countenance; for they disfigure their faces,  
that they may appear to men to fast. Verily I say  
to you, they have in full their reward. But thou, 17  
when thou fastest, anoint thy head, and wash thy  
face; that thou appear not to men to fast, but to 18  
thy Father who is in secret; and thy Father who  
seeth in secret will reward thee.

Lay not up for yourselves treasures on the earth, 19  
where moth and rust consume, and where thieves  
break through and steal. But lay up for yourselves 20  
treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust  
consumes, and where thieves do not break through  
nor steal. For where your treasure is, there will 21  
your heart be also.

The lamp of the body is the eye. If therefore 22  
thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be light;  
but if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be 23  
dark. If therefore the light that is in thee is dark-  
ness, how great the darkness! No man can serve 24  
two masters; for either he will hate the one, and  
love the other, or he will hold to one and despise  
the other. Ye can not serve God and Mammon.

For this cause I say to you, take not thought for 25  
your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink;  
nor for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the

MATTHEW.

- life more than food, and the body than raiment?  
26 Behold the fowls of the air, that they sow not, nor  
reap, nor gather into barns ; and your heavenly Fa-  
ther feeds them. Are ye not much better than they?  
27 Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit  
28 to his stature? And why take ye thought for rai-  
ment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they  
29 grow. They toil not, nor spin ; and I say to you,  
that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed  
30 like one of these. And if God so clothes the grass  
of the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast  
into the oven, will he not much more you, O ye of  
31 little faith? Take not thought therefore, saying,  
What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or,  
32 Wherewith shall we be clothed? (For after all  
these do the Gentiles seek.) For your heavenly  
33 Father knows that ye have need of all these. But seek  
first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness ;  
34 and all these shall be added to you. Take not  
thought, therefore, for the morrow ; for the morrow  
will take thought for itself. Sufficient for the day  
is the evil thereof.

- 1 VII. JUDGE not, that ye be not judged. For with  
2 what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged ; and  
with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to  
3 you. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in

---

V. 27. *or*, to his age

## CHAPTER VII.

thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that  
is in thine own eye? Or how wilt thou say to thy 4  
brother : Let me cast out the mote from thine eye ;  
and, behold, the beam is in thine own eye? Hypo- 5  
crite! first cast out the beam out of thine own eye ;  
and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote  
out of thy brother's eye.

Give not that which is holy to the dogs, nor cast 6  
your pearls before the swine ; lest they trample  
them with their feet, and turn and rend you.

Ask, and it shall be given you ; seek, and ye shall 7  
find ; knock, and it shall be opened to you. For 8  
every one that asketh receiveth ; and he that seeketh  
findeth ; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.  
Or what man is there of you, of whom if his son ask 9  
bread, will he give him a stone? And if he ask a 10  
fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then, being 11  
evil, know how to give good gifts to your children,  
how much more shall your Father who is in heaven  
give good things to them that ask him? Therefore 12  
all things whatsoever ye would that men should do  
to you, so also do ye to them ; for this is the law  
and the prophets.

Enter in through the strait gate ; for wide is the 13  
gate, and broad the way, that leads to destruction,  
and many are they that go in thereat. For strait 14

---

V. 14. *In some ancient copies : How strait*

## MATTHEW.

is the gate, and narrow the way, that leads to life, and few are they that find it.

15 Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravening wolves.

16 Ye shall know them from their fruits. Do men  
17 gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? So every  
18 good tree brings forth good fruit; but the corrupt  
19 tree brings forth evil fruit. A good tree can not  
20 bring forth evil fruit, nor a corrupt tree bring forth  
21 good fruit. Every tree that brings not forth good  
22 fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. So then,  
23 from their fruits ye shall know them.

21 Not every one that says to me, Lord, Lord, shall  
22 enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth  
23 the will of my Father who is in heaven. Many will  
24 say to me in that day: Lord, Lord, have we not  
25 prophesied in thy name, and in thy name cast out  
26 devils, and in thy name done many miracles? And  
then will I profess to them, I never knew you; depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

24 Therefore every one that hears these sayings of  
25 mine, and doeth them, I will liken him to a wise  
26 man, that built his house on the rock. And the  
rain descended, and the streams came, and the winds  
blew, and fell upon that house; and it did not fall,  
for it had been founded on the rock. And every one  
that hears these sayings of mine, and doeth them

---

V. 24. *In some ancient copies: my sayings*

## CHAPTER VIII.

not, shall be likened to a foolish man, that built his house on the sand. And the rain descended, and the streams came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house, and it fell; and great was the fall of it.

And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, that the multitudes were astonished at his teaching. For he taught them as having authority, and not as the scribes.

VIII. WHEN he had come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him. And, behold, there came a leper and bowed down to him, saying: Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst cleanse me. And he put forth his hand, and touched him, saying: I will; be thou cleansed. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed. And Jesus says to him: See thou tell no man; but go, show thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony to them.

And when he had entered into Capernaum, there came to him a centurion, beseeching him, and saying: Lord, my servant lies at home palsied, grievously tormented. And Jesus says to him: I will come and heal him. The centurion answered and said: Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof; but only say in a word, and my servant will be healed. For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me, and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and



## MATTHEW.

he cometh ; and to my servant, Do this, and he  
10 doeth it. When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and  
said to them that followed : Verily I say to you, I  
11 have not found so great faith even in Israel. And  
I say to you, that many shall come from the east  
and west, and shall recline at table, with Abraham,  
and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.  
12 But the sons of the kingdom shall be cast out  
into the outer darkness ; there shall be weeping and  
13 gnashing of teeth. And Jesus said to the centuri-  
on : Go thy way ; and as thou hast believed, be it  
done to thee. And his servant was healed in that  
hour.

14 And Jesus, having come into the house of Peter,  
saw his mother-in-law lying, and sick of a fever.  
15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her ;  
16 and she arose, and ministered to him. When even-  
ing was come, they brought to him many that were  
possessed with devils ; and he cast out the spirits  
17 with a word, and healed all that were sick. That  
it might be fulfilled which was spoken through  
Isaiah the prophet, saying : Himself took our in-  
firmities, and bore our sicknesses.

18 And Jesus, seeing great multitudes about him,  
19 commanded to depart to the other side. And a  
certain scribe came, and said to him : Teacher, I  
20 will follow thee withersoever thou goest. And  
Jesus says to him : The foxes have holes and the

## CHAPTER VIII.

birds of the air nests ; but the Son of man has not where to lay his head. And another of his disciples 21 said to him : Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. But Jesus said to him : Follow me ; 22 and let the dead bury their own dead.

And when he had entered into the ship, his disci- 23 ples followed him. And, behold, there arose a great 24 tempest in the sea, so that the ship was covered by the waves ; but he was sleeping. And the disciples 25 came and awoke him, saying : Lord, save us ; we perish. And he says to them : Why are ye fear- 26 ful, O ye of little faith ? Then he arose and rebuked the winds and the sea ; and there was a great calm. And the men marvelled saying : What man- 27 ner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him !

And when he had come to the other side, into the 28 country of the Gadarenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no one was able to pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying : What have we 29 to do with thee, Son of God ? Art thou come hither to torment us before the time ? And there was 30 afar off from them a herd of many swine feeding. And the devils besought him, saying : If thou cast 31 us out, send us away into the herd of swine. And he 32 said to them, Go. And coming out, they went away

---

V. 28. *In some ancient copies : Gergesenes*

## MATTHEW.

- into the swine ; and, behold, the whole herd rushed down the steep into the sea, and perished in the waters.
- 33 And the herdsmen fled, and went away into the city, and told every thing, and what had befallen the
- 34 possessed with devils. And, behold, all the city came out to meet Jesus ; and when they saw him, they besought that he would depart from their borders.

- 1 IX. AND he entered into the ship, and passed over,  
2 and came to his own city. And, behold, they brought to him one that was palsied, lying on a bed. And Jesus, seeing their faith, said to the palsied man :  
3 Child, be of good cheer ; thy sins are forgiven. And, behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves,  
4 This man blasphemeth. And Jesus knowing their thoughts said : Wherefore think ye evil in your  
5 hearts ? For which is easier, to say : Thy sins are  
6 forgiven ; or to say : Arise, and walk ? But that ye may know that the Son of man has power on earth to forgive sins, (then says he to the palsied man) Arise, take up thy bed, and go to thy  
7 house. And he arose, and departed to his house.  
8 And when the multitudes saw it, they feared, and glorified God, who had given such power to men.  
9 And as Jesus passed on from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom ; and he says to him : Follow me. And he arose  
10 and followed him. And it came to pass, as he reclined at table in the house, behold, many publicans

## CHAPTER IX.

and sinners came and reclined at table with Jesus and his disciples. And the Pharisees, seeing it, said 11 to his disciples : Why does your teacher eat with the publicans and the sinners? And Jesus hearing 12 it, said : They that are whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. But go, and learn what this 13 means, I desire mercy and not sacrifice ; for I came not to call righteous men, but sinners.

Then came to him the disciples of John, saying : 14 Why do we and the Pharisees fast often, but thy disciples fast not? And Jesus said to them : Can 15 the sons of the bridechamber mourn, so long as the bridegroom is with them? But days will come when the bridegroom will be taken from them, and then shall they fast. And no one puts a piece of 16 unfulled cloth on an old garment ; for that which fills it up takes from the garment, and a worse rent is made. Nor do they put new wine into old skins ; 17 else the skins burst, and the wine runs out, and the skins are destroyed. But they put new wine into new skins, and both are preserved together.

While he was speaking these things to them, be- 18 hold, there came a ruler, and bowed down to him, saying : My daughter has just now died ; but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she will live. And 19 Jesus arose and was following him, and his disciples. And behold, a woman, having a flow of blood twelve 20 years, came behind, and touched the fringe of his garment. For she said within herself, If I may but 21

MATTHEW.

22 touch his garment, I shall be made whole. And  
Jesus, turning and seeing her, said : Daughter, be  
of good cheer ; thy faith has made thee whole. And  
23 the woman was made whole from that hour. And  
when Jesus came into the house of the ruler, and  
saw the minstrels and the crowd making a noise, he  
24 said : Give place ; for the maiden is not dead, but  
25 sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn. But  
when the crowd was put forth, he went in, and took  
26 hold of her hand, and the maiden arose. And this  
report went abroad into all that land.

27 And as Jesus passed on from thence, two blind  
men followed him, crying, and saying : Have mercy  
28 on us, Son of David. And when he had come into  
the house, the blind men came to him. And Jesus  
says to them : Believe ye that I am able to do this ?  
29 They say to him : Yea, Lord. Then touched he  
their eyes, saying : According to your faith be it  
30 done to you. And their eyes were opened. And  
Jesus sternly charged them, saying : Take heed, let  
31 no one know it. But they, going out, spread  
abroad his fame in all that country.

32 And as they were going out, behold, they brought  
33 to him a man dumb, possessed with a devil. And  
when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake. And  
the multitudes marvelled, saying : It was never so  
34 seen in Israel. But the Pharisees said : He casts  
out the devils through the prince of the devils.

## CHAPTER X.

And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, 35  
teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the  
good news of the kingdom, and healing every sick-  
ness and every infirmity. And seeing the multi- 36  
tudes, he was moved with compassion for them, be-  
cause they were harrassed, and scattered, as sheep  
having no shepherd. Then says he to his disciples : 37  
The harvest indeed is great, but the laborers are few.  
Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he 38  
will send forth laborers into his harvest.

X. AND calling to him his twelve disciples, he gave 1  
them power over unclean spirits, so as to cast them  
out, and to heal every sickness and every infirmity.

Now the names of the twelve apostles are these ; 2  
first Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his  
brother ; James the son of Zebedee, and John his  
brother ; Philip, and Bartholomew ; Thomas, and 3  
Matthew the publican ; James the son of Alpheus,  
and Lebbeus surnamed Thaddeus ; Simon the Can- 4  
anite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

These twelve Jesus sent forth, and charged them, 5  
saying : Go not into the way to the Gentiles, and  
into a city of Samaritans enter not. But go 6  
rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And 7  
as ye go, preach, saying : The kingdom of heaven is

---

V. 4. Cananite, (*as some suppose*) = Zelotes.

MATTHEW.

8 at hand. Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the  
lepers, cast out devils. Freely ye have received,  
9 freely give. Provide not gold, nor silver, nor brass  
10 in your girdles; nor bag for the journey, nor two  
coats, nor sandals, nor staff; for the laborer is worthy  
11 of his living. And into whatever city or village ye  
shall enter, inquire who in it is worthy; and there  
12 abide till ye go thence. But when ye come into the  
13 house, salute it. And if the house be worthy, let your  
peace come upon it; but if it be not worthy, let  
14 your peace return to you. And whoever shall not re-  
ceive you, nor hear your words, when ye go out of  
that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet.  
15 Verily I say to you, It shall be more tolerable for the  
land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment,  
than for that city.

16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of  
wolves; be therefore wise as serpents, and simple as  
17 doves. But beware of men; for they will deliver  
you up to councils, and will scourge you in their  
18 synagogues; and also before governors and kings  
shall ye be brought for my sake, for a testimony to  
them and to the Gentiles.

19 But when they deliver you up, take not thought  
how or what ye shall speak; for it shall be given  
20 you in that hour what ye shall speak. For it is not

---

V. 8. *Some ancient copies omit raise the dead.*

## CHAPTER X.

ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaks in you.

And the brother will deliver up the brother to 21 death, and the father the child; and children will rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death. And ye will be hated by all, for my name's 22 sake; but he that has endured to the end, the same shall be saved.

But when they persecute you in this city, flee into 23 the other; for verily I say to you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man come.

A disciple is not above the teacher, nor a servant 24 above his lord. It is enough for the disciple that 25 he be as his teacher, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more them of his household.

Fear them not therefore; for there is nothing 26 covered that shall not be revealed, and hid that shall not be known. What I say to you in the darkness, 27 that speak ye in the light; and what ye hear in the ear, that preach upon the house-tops. And be not 28 afraid of them that kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear him who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

Are not two sparrows sold for a penny? And one 29 of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. But the very hairs of your head are all 30



MATTHEW.

31 numbered. Fear not therefore ; ye are of more value than many sparrows.

32 Every one, therefore, who shall acknowledge me before men, him will I also acknowledge before  
33 my Father who is in heaven. But whoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father who is in heaven.

34 Think not that I came to send peace on the earth ;  
35 I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I came to set a man at variance with his father, and a daughter with her mother, and a bride with her  
36 mother-in-law ; and a man's foes will be they of his household.

37 He that loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me ; and he that loves son or  
38 daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that does not take his cross and follow after me,  
39 is not worthy of me. He that finds his life shall lose it ; and he that loses his life for my sake shall find it.

40 He that receives you receives me ; and he that receives me receives him that sent me. He that receives a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward ; and he that receives a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall  
42 receive a righteous man's reward. And whoever shall give to drink a cup of cold water only to one of these little ones, in the name of a disciple, verily I say to you, he shall not lose his reward.

CHAPTER XI.

XI. AND it came to pass, when Jesus had made 1  
an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he de-  
parted thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

Now when John had heard in the prison the 2  
works of the Christ, he sent by his disciples, and said  
to him : Art thou he that cometh, or look we for 3  
another ?

And Jesus answering said to them : Go and re- 4  
port to John what ye hear and see. The blind re- 5  
ceive sight and the lame walk, lepers are cleansed  
and the deaf hear, the dead are raised, and the poor  
have good tidings preached to them. And happy 6  
is he, whoever shall not be offended at me.

And as these were departing, Jesus began to say 7  
to the multitudes concerning John : What went ye  
out into the wilderness to behold ? A reed shaken  
by the wind ?

But what went ye out to see ? A man clothed 8  
in soft raiment ? Behold, they that wear soft cloth-  
ing are in kings' houses.

But what went ye out to see ? A prophet ? Yea, 9  
I say to you, and more than a prophet. For this 10  
is he of whom it is written : Behold, I send forth my  
messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way  
before thee. Verily I say to you, Among them that 11  
are born of women, there has not risen a greater

---

V. 9. *In some ancient copies :* But why went ye out ?  
To see a prophet ?

## MATTHEW.

than John the Immerser. But he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.

12 And from the days of John the Immerser until now,  
the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and the vio-  
13 lent seize upon it. For all the prophets and the  
14 law prophesied until John. And if ye are willing to  
15 receive it, he is the Elijah that should come. He  
that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

16 But whereto shall I liken this generation? It is  
like to children sitting in the markets, who call  
17 to their fellows, and say: We piped to you, and ye  
danced not; we sang the lament, and ye beat not  
18 the breast. For John came neither eating nor drink-  
19 ing, and they say, He has a devil. The Son of man  
came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a  
glutton and a wine-drinker, a friend of publicans and  
sinners. But wisdom is justified on the part of her  
children.

20 Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most  
of his miracles were done, because they repented not.  
21 Woe to thee, Chorazin! woe to thee, Bethsaida!  
For if the miracles that have been done in you had  
been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have re-  
22 pented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. But I say  
to you, it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Si-  
don in the day of judgment, than for you.

---

V. 15. *In some ancient copies:* He that hath ears, let him hear.

## CHAPTER XII.

And thou, Capernaum, that wast exalted to heaven, 23  
shalt go down to the underworld. For if the mira-  
cles that have been done in thee had been done in  
Sodom, it would have remained until this day. But 24  
I say to you, that it shall be more tolerable for  
the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for  
thee.

At that time Jesus answered and said : I thank 25  
thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou  
hast hid these things from the wise and discerning,  
and hast revealed them to babes ; yea, O Father, 26  
that so it seemed good in thy sight ! All things 27  
are delivered to me by my Father ; and no one  
knows the Son but the Father ; nor does any one  
know the Father but the Son, and he to whom the  
Son is pleased to reveal him.

Come unto me all ye that labor and are heavy 28  
laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon 29  
you, and learn from me ; for I am meek and lowly  
in heart ; and ye shall find rest for your souls. For 30  
my yoke is easy, and my burden light.

XII. At that time Jesus went on the sabbath 1  
through the grain fields ; and his disciples hungered,  
and began to pluck ears of grain, and to eat. And 2  
the Pharisees seeing it said to him : Behold, thy dis-

---

V. 23. *In the oldest copies* : shalt thou be exalted to heav-  
en? Thou shalt go down to the underworld.

## MATTHEW.

- principles are doing that which it is not lawful to do on  
3 the sabbath. And he said to them: Have ye not  
read what David did, when he hungered, himself and  
4 those with him; how he entered into the house of  
God, and ate the showbread, which it was not law-  
ful for him to eat, nor for those with him, but for  
5 the priests alone? Or have ye not read in the law,  
that on the sabbath the priests in the temple profane  
6 the sabbath, and are blameless? But I say to you,  
7 that a greater than the temple is here. But if ye  
had known what this means, I desire mercy and not  
sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the blameless.  
8 For the Son of man is Lord of the sabbath.
- 9 And departing from thence, he went into their  
10 synagogue. And behold there was a man having  
his hand withered. And they asked him, saying:  
Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath? that they might  
11 accuse him. And he said to them: What man  
shall there be of you, that shall have one sheep, and  
if this fall into a pit on the sabbath, will not lay  
12 hold of it, and raise it up? How much better then  
is a man than a sheep! So that it is lawful to do  
13 well on the sabbath. Then says he to the man:  
Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched it forth;  
and it was restored whole, as the other.
- 14 Then the Pharisees went out, and took counsel  
15 against him, how they might destroy him. But  
Jesus knowing it, withdrew himself from thence;

## CHAPTER XII.

and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all, and charged them that they should not make him known. That it might be fulfilled which was spoken through Isaiah the prophet, saying : Behold my servant, whom I have chosen, my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased. I will put my Spirit upon him, and he shall declare judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not strive, nor cry ; nor shall any one hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory. And in his name shall Gentiles hope. 21

Then was brought to him one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb ; and he healed him, so that the blind and dumb both spake and saw. And all the multitudes were amazed, and said : Is this the Son of David ? But the Pharisees hearing it said : This man does not cast out devils, except through Beelzebul prince of the devils. And Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said to them : Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation ; and any city or house divided against itself shall not stand. And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself ; how then shall his kingdom stand ? And if I through Beelzebul cast out devils, through whom do your sons cast them out ? Therefore they shall be your judges. But if through the Spirit 28

---

V. 22. *The oldest copies omit blind and both.*

## MATTHEW.

- of God I cast out devils, then is the kingdom of  
29 God come near to you. Or how can any one enter  
into a strong man's house, and seize upon his goods,  
except he first bind the strong man? And then he  
will plunder his house.
- 30 He that is not with me is against me; and he  
that gathers not with me scatters abroad.
- 31 Therefore I say to you, Every sin and blasphemy  
shall be forgiven men; but the blasphemy against  
32 the Spirit shall not be forgiven men. And whoever  
speaks a word against the Son of man, it shall be  
forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the Holy  
Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this  
world, nor in that which is to come.
- 33 Either make the tree good and its fruit good, or  
make the tree corrupt and its fruit corrupt; for by  
the fruit the tree is known.
- 34 Brood of vipers! How can ye, being evil, speak  
good things? For out of the abundance of the  
35 heart the mouth speaks. The good man out of the  
good treasure sends forth good things; and the evil  
man out of the evil treasure sends forth evil things.
- 36 But I say to you, that every idle word that men  
shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the  
37 day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be  
justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.
- 38 Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees  
answered him saying: Teacher, we desire to see a  
39 sign from thee. But he answered and said to them:

### CHAPTER XIII.

An evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign ;  
and no sign shall be given to it, but the sign of Jo-  
nah the prophet. For as Jonah was three days and 40  
three nights in the belly of the fish, so shall the Son  
of man be three days and three nights in the heart  
of the earth. Men of Nineveh shall rise in the judg- 41  
ment with this generation, and shall condemn it ;  
because they repented at the preaching of Jonah,  
and behold, a greater than Jonah is here. A queen 42  
of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this  
generation, and shall condemn it ; for she came from  
the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom  
of Solomon, and behold, a greater than Solomon is  
here.

But when the unclean spirit is gone out from the 43  
man, he goes through dry places seeking rest, and  
finds it not. Then he says, I will return into my 44  
house from whence I came out ; and coming he finds  
it empty, swept, and set in order. Then goes he, 45  
and takes with him seven other\*spirits more wicked  
than himself, and they enter in and dwell there ; and  
the last state of that man becomes worse than the  
first. So shall it be also with this wicked generation.

While he yet talked to the multitudes, behold, 46  
his mother and his brothers were standing without,  
seeking to speak to him. Then one said to him : 47  
Behold, thy mother and thy brothers stand without,  
seeking to speak to thee. But he answered and 48  
said to him that told him : Who is my mother, and



MATTHEW.

49 who are my brothers? And he stretched forth his  
hand towards his disciples, and said : Behold my  
50 mother and my brothers ! For whosoever shall do  
the will of my Father who is in heaven, he is my  
brother, and sister, and mother.

1 XIII. THE same day went Jesus out of the house,  
2 and sat by the sea-side. And great multitudes were  
gathered together to him, so that he went into the  
ship and sat down ; and all the multitude stood on  
3 the beach. And he spake many things to them in  
parables, saying :

4 Behold, the sower went forth to sow. And as he  
sowed, some fell by the way-side, and the fowls came  
5 and devoured them. And others fell on the rocky  
places, where they had not much earth ; and forth-  
with they sprang up, because they had not depth of  
6 earth. And when the sun was up, they were scorched ;  
and because they had not root, they withered  
7 away. And others fell upon the thorns ; and the  
8 thorns came up, and choked them. And others fell  
on the good ground, and yielded fruit, some a hun-  
9 dredfold, some sixty, some thirty. He that hath  
ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And the disciples came and said to him : Why  
11 speakest thou to them in parables ? And he an-

---

-V. 9. *In some ancient copies* : He that hath ears, let him  
hear.

### CHAPTER XIII.

swering said to them : To you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven ; but to them it is not given. For whoever hath, to him shall 12 be given, and he shall have abundance ; but whoever hath not, even what he hath shall be taken from him. Therefore speak I to them in parables ; because seeing they see not, and hearing they hear not, nor understand. And in them is fulfilled the prophesy 14 of Isaiah, which says : With hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand ; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive. For the heart of 15 this people is become gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed ; lest haply they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and turn and I shall heal them.

But happy are your eyes, because they see ; and 16 your ears, because they hear. For verily I say to 17 you, that many prophets and righteous men desired to see what ye are beholding, and saw not, and to hear what ye are hearing, and heard not.

Hear therefore the parable of the sower. 18 When any one hears the word of the kingdom, and 19 understands not, then comes the evil one and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is that which was sown by the way-side.

And that sown on the rocky places, this is he that 20

---

V. 11. *Or*, Because to you it is given.

MATTHEW.

- hears the word, and immediately with joy receives  
21 it ; and has not root in himself, but is only for a  
time ; and when tribulation or persecution arises  
because of the word, immediately he is offended.
- 22 And that sown among the thorns, this is he that  
hears the word, and the care of this world and the  
deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and it becomes  
23 unfruitful. And that sown on the good ground, this is  
he that hears the word and understands ; who bears  
fruit, and produces, some a hundredfold, some sixty,  
some thirty.
- 24 Another parable put he forth to them, saying :  
The kingdom of heaven is likened to a man that  
25 sowed good seed in his field. But while men slept,  
his enemy came and sowed darnel among the wheat,  
26 and went away. And when the blade sprang up  
and produced fruit, then appeared the darnel also.  
27 So the servants of the house-holder came and said  
to him : Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy  
28 field ? From whence then has it darnel ? He said  
to them : An enemy did this. The servants said to  
him : Wilt thou then that we go and gather them  
29 up ? He said, Nay ; lest while ye gather up the darnel,  
30 ye root up the wheat with them. Let both grow  
together until the harvest. And in time of har-  
vest I will say to the reapers : Gather up first the  
darnel, and bind them in bundles to burn them ; but  
gather the wheat into my barn.
- 31 Another parable put he forth to them, saying :

## CHAPTER XIII.

The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard, which a man took and sowed in his field. Which 32 is least indeed of all seeds ; but when it is grown, it is greater than the herbs, and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in its branches.

Another parable spake he to them : The kingdom 33 of heaven is like to leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

All these things spake Jesus to the multitudes in 34 parables ; and without a parable he spake nothing to them. That it might be fulfilled which was spoken 35 through the prophet, saying : I will open my mouth in parables ; I will utter things hidden from the foundation of the world.

Then having sent away the multitudes, he went 36 into the house. And his disciples came to him, saying : Explain to us the parable of the darnel of the field. And he answering said to them : 37

He that sows the good seed is the Son of man. The field is the world. The good seed, these are the 38 sons of the kingdom ; but the darnel are the sons of the evil one, and the enemy that sowed them is the 39 Devil. The harvest is the end of the world ; and the reapers are angels. As therefore the darnel 40 are gathered up and are burned with fire, so shall it be in the end of the world. The Son of man will 41

MATTHEW.

- send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all the causes of offence, and them that  
42 do iniquity, and shall cast them into the furnace of fire ;  
43 there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their father. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.
- 44 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like to a treasure hidden in the field, which a man found and concealed ; and for joy thereof he goes and sells all that he has, and buys that field.
- 45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like to a merchant seeking goodly pearls ; and having found one  
46 pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had and bought it.
- 47 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like to a net, cast into the sea, and gathering together of every kind.  
48 Which, when it was filled, they drew up upon the beach, and sat down and gathered the good into vessels, but  
49 cast the bad away. So shall it be in the end of the world. The angels shall go forth, and shall separate  
50 the wicked from among the just, and shall cast them into the furnace of fire ; there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.
- 51 Have ye understood all these things ? They say

---

V. 43. *In some ancient copies :* He that hath ears, let him hear.

V. 44. *or,* from his joy

## CHAPTER XIV.

to him, Yea, Lord. Then said he to them : There- 52  
fore every scribe, instructed in the kingdom of heav-  
en, is like to a householder, who brings forth out of  
his treasure new and old.

And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished 53  
these parables, that he departed thence. And coming 54  
into his own country, he taught them in their syna-  
gogue ; so that they were astonished, and said :  
Whence has this man this wisdom, and the miracles ?  
Is not this the carpenter's son ? Is not his mother 55  
called Mary, and his brothers, James, and Joseph,  
and Simon, and Judas ? And his sisters, are they 56  
not all with us ? Whence then has this man all these  
things ? And they were offended at him. But Je- 57  
sus said to them : A prophet is not without honor,  
save in his own country, and in his own house. And 58  
he did not many miracles there, because of their  
unbelief.

XIV. At that time Herod the tetrarch heard the 1  
fame of Jesus. And he said to his servants : This is 2  
John the Immerser ; he is risen from the dead, and  
therefore do these powers work in him.

For Herod had laid hold of John, and bound him 3  
and put him in prison, for the sake of Herodias his  
brother Philip's wife. For John said to him : It is 4  
not lawful for thee to have her. And he desired to 5

---

V. 55. *In some ancient copies : Joses*

V. 2. *or, the powers*

## MATTHEW.

put him to death, but feared the multitude, because  
6 they held him as a prophet. But when Herod's  
birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced  
7 ed before them, and pleased Herod. Whereupon he  
promised with an oath, to give her whatever she  
8 should ask. And she, being urged on by her mother,  
says : Give me here, on a platter, the head of John  
9 the Immerser. And the king was sorry ; but for the  
sake of the oath, and of them that reclined at table  
10 with him, he commanded it to be given. And he  
11 sent, and beheaded John in the prison. And his  
head was brought on a platter, and was given to the  
12 damsel, and she brought it to her mother. And his  
disciples came and took up the body, and buried it ;  
and they went and reported it to Jesus.

13 And when Jesus heard it, he withdrew from thence  
by ship into a desert place apart. And the multitudes  
hearing of it, followed him on foot from the  
14 cities. And going forth he saw a great multitude,  
and had compassion on them, and he healed their  
sick.

15 And when it was evening, his disciples came to  
him, saying : This is a desert place, and the time is  
now passed ; dismiss the multitudes, that they may  
go away into the villages, and buy themselves vict-  
16 uals. But Jesus said to them : They need not go  
17 away ; give ye them to eat. And they say to him :  
18 We have here but five loaves and two fishes. He said,  
19 Bring them hither to me. And he commanded the

#### CHAPTER XIV.

multitudes to lie down on the grass, and took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to the disciples, and the disciples to the multitudes. And they all ate, and were filled ; and they took up 20 of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full. And they that ate were about five thousand men, 21 besides women and children.

And straightway he constrained his disciples to 22 enter into the ship, and to go before him to the other side, while he dismissed the multitudes.

And when he had dismissed the multitudes, he 23 went up into the mountain apart to pray ; and when evening was come, he was there alone. But the ship 24 was now in the midst of the sea, vexed by the waves ; for the wind was contrary. And in the fourth watch 25 of the night he went to them, walking on the sea. And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, 26 they were troubled, saying : It is a spectre ; and they cried out for fear. But straightway Jesus spake to 27 them, saying : Be of good cheer ; it is I, be not afraid. And Peter answered him and said : Lord, if it be 28 thou, bid me come to thee on the water. And he 29 said, Come. And coming down from the ship, Peter walked on the water, to go to Jesus. But see- 30 ing the wind boisterous, he was afraid ; and beginning to sink, he cried out, saying : Lord, save me. And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand and 31



MATTHEW.

took hold of him, and said to him : O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt ?

32 And when they had entered into the ship, the  
33 wind ceased. Then those in the ship came and worshipped him, saying : Of a truth, thou art the Son of God.

34 And passing over, they came into the land of Gen-  
35 nesaret. And the men of that place, knowing him, sent out into all that country round, and brought to  
36 him all that were diseased ; and besought him that they might only touch the fringe of his garment ; and as many as touched were made whole.

1 XV. THEN came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees  
2 from Jerusalem, saying : Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders ? For they wash  
3 not their hands when they eat bread. And he answering said to them : Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God, for the sake of your tra-  
4 dition ? For God commanded, saying : Honor thy father and mother ; and he that curses father or  
5 mother, let him surely die. But ye say : Whoever says to his father or his mother, It is a gift, whatsoever thou mightest be profited with from me,  
6 shall not honor his father or his mother ; and ye

---

V. 33. *or*, bowed down to him

V. 4. *In the oldest copies* : God said

## CHAPTER XV.

have made the word of God of no effect, for the sake of your tradition.

Hypocrites! Well did Isaiah prophesy of you, 7  
saying: This people honors me with their lips, but 8  
their heart is far from me. But in vain they wor- 9  
ship me, teaching as doctrines commandments of  
men.

And he called the multitude, and said to them: 10  
Hear, and understand. Not that which goes into 11  
the mouth defiles the man; but that which comes  
out of the mouth, this defiles the man.

Then came his disciples, and said to him: Know- 12  
est thou that the Pharisees, when they heard the  
saying, were offended? And he answering said: 13  
Every plant, which my heavenly Father has not  
planted, shall be rooted up. Let them alone; they 14  
are blind leaders of the blind; and if the blind lead  
the blind, both will fall into the ditch.

And Peter answering said to him: Explain to us 15  
this parable. And he said: Are ye also even yet 16  
without understanding? Do ye not yet understand, 17  
that whatever enters in at the mouth goes into the  
belly, and is cast out into the drain? But the things 18  
that proceed out of the mouth come forth from the  
heart; and they defile the man. For out of the 19  
heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, for-  
nications, thefts, false-witnessings, blasphemies.

---

V. 6. *In some ancient copies:* the commandment of God

## MATTHEW.

- 20 These are the things that defile the man ; but to eat with unwashen hands defiles not the man.
- 21 Then Jesus went forth from thence, and withdrew  
22 into the parts of Tyre and Sidon. And behold, a woman of Canaan, coming out from those borders, cried to him, saying : Have mercy on me, O Lord, Son of David ; my daughter is grievously possessed  
23 with a devil. But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying :  
24 Dismiss her ; because she cries after us. But he answered and said : I was not sent except to the lost  
25 sheep of the house of Israel. Then came she and  
26 bowed down to him, saying : Lord, help me. But he answered and said : It is not good to take the  
27 children's bread, and cast it to the dogs. And she said : Yea, Lord ; for the dogs also eat of the crumbs  
28 that fall from their master's table. Then Jesus answered and said to her : O woman, great is thy faith ; be it done to thee as thou wilt. And her daughter was healed from that hour.
- 29 And Jesus departed from thence, and came near to the sea of Galilee ; and he went up into the mountain and sat down there. And great multitudes  
30 came to him, having with them lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and laid them down at his  
31 feet, and he healed them. So that the multitudes wondered, when they saw the dumb speaking, the maimed whole, the lame walking, and the blind seeing ; and they glorified the God of Israel.

## CHAPTER XVI.

And Jesus having called to him his disciples, said : 32  
I have compassion on the multitude, because they  
continue with me now three days, and have nothing  
to eat ; and I will not dismiss them fasting, lest they  
faint in the way. And his disciples say to him : 33  
Whence should we have so many loaves in the wil-  
derness, as to fill so great a multitude ? And Jesus 34  
says to them : How many loaves have ye ? And  
they said : Seven, and a few little fishes. And he 35  
commanded the multitudes to lie down on the ground.  
And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and 36  
gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples,  
and the disciples to the multitude. And they all ate, 37  
and were filled. And they took up of the fragments  
that remained seven baskets full. And they that 38  
ate were four thousand men, besides women and chil-  
dren. And dismissing the multitudes, he entered 39  
into the ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

XVI. AND the Pharisees and Sadducees came, 1  
and tempting desired him to show them a sign from  
heaven. He answered and said to them : When it 2  
is evening, ye say, Fair weather ! for the sky is red.  
And in the morning, Foul weather to day ! for the 3  
sky is red and lowering. Ye know how to discern  
the face of the sky, but can ye not the signs of  
the times ?

An evil and adulterous generation seeks after a 4

## MATTHEW.

sign ; and no sign shall be given to it, but the sign of Jonah. And he left them, and departed.

5 And coming to the other side, his disciples forgot to  
6 take bread. And Jesus said to them : Take heed,  
and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the  
7 Sadducees. And they reasoned among themselves,  
8 saying : Because we took no bread ! And Jesus  
knowing it said : O ye of little faith, why reason ye  
9 among yourselves, because ye took no bread ? Do  
ye not yet understand, nor remember the five loaves  
of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took  
10 up ? Nor the seven loaves of the four thousand, and  
11 how many baskets ye took up ? How is it that ye  
do not understand, that I spake not to you of bread ?  
But, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of  
12 the Sadducees ! Then understood they, that he did  
not bid them beware of the leaven of bread, but of  
the teaching of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

13 When Jesus came into the parts of Cesarea Phi-  
lippi, he asked his disciples, saying : Who do men  
14 say that the Son of man is ? And they said : Some,  
John the Immerser ; and others, Elijah ; and others,  
15 Jeremiah, or one of the prophets. He says to them :  
16 But who do ye say that I am ? And Simon Peter an-  
swered and said : Thou art the Christ, the Son of the  
17 living God. And Jesus answered and said to him :

---

V. 13. *In many ancient copies :* that I the Son of man  
am

## CHAPTER XVI.

Happy art thou, Simon Bar-jonas; for flesh and blood did not reveal it to thee, but my Father who is in heaven. And I also say to thee, that thou art Peter, 18 and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of the underworld shall not prevail against it. And I will give to thee the keys of the 19 kingdom of heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Then charged he his disciples, that they should 20 tell no one that he is the Christ.

From that time began Jesus to show to his disci- 21 ples, that he must go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be put to death, and rise the third day.

And Peter taking him aside began to rebuke him, 22 saying: Be it far from thee, Lord; this shall not be to thee. But he turned and said to Peter: Get 23 thee behind me, Satan; thou art an offense to me; for thou thinkest not the things of God but of men.

Then Jesus said to his disciples: If any one will 24 come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whoever will save his 25 life shall lose it; and whoever may lose his life for my sake shall find it. For what is a man profited, 26

---

V. 17. Bar-jonas: *that is*, Son of Jonas

V. 18. Peter: *that is*, rock

Ib. *or*, my congregation

V. 23. *or*, adversary

MATTHEW.

if he shall gain the whole world, and forfeit his soul?  
Or what shall a man give as an exchange for his  
27 soul? For the Son of man shall come in the glory  
of his Father with his angels; and then he will re-  
ward each one according to his works.

28 Verily I say to you, there are some of those stand-  
ing here, who shall not taste of death, till they see  
the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

1 XVII. AND after six days Jesus takes with him  
Peter, and James, and John his brother, and brings  
2 them up into a high mountain apart. And he was  
transfigured before them; and his face shone as  
the sun, and his garments became white as the  
3 light. And behold, there appeared to them Moses  
4 and Elijah, talking with him. And Peter answer-  
ing said to Jesus: Lord, it is good for us to be here. If  
5 thou wilt, let us make here three tents; one for  
thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah. While  
he was yet speaking, behold a bright cloud over-  
shadowed them. And behold a voice out of the cloud,  
6 saying: This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well  
pleased; hear ye him. And the disciples hearing it,  
7 fell on their face, and were sore afraid. And Jesus  
came and touched them, and said: Arise, and be not  
8 afraid. And lifting up their eyes, they saw no one,  
save Jesus only.

## CHAPTER XVII.

And as they came down out of the mountain, Jesus 9 charged them, saying : Tell no one the vision, until the Son of man is risen from the dead.

And his disciples asked him, saying : Why then 10 say the scribes that Elijah must first come ? And 11 he answering said : Elijah indeed comes, and shall restore all things. But I say to you, that Elijah is 12 already come, and they knew him not, but have done with him whatever they would. So also is the Son of man about to suffer by them.

Then the disciples understood that he spake to 13 them of John the Immerser.

And when they were come to the multitude, there 14 came to him a man, kneeling down to him, and saying : Lord, have mercy on my son ; for he is lu- 15 natic, and is sorely afflicted ; for oftentimes he falls into the fire, and oft into the water. And I brought 16 him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him. And Jesus answering said : O faithless and perverse 17 generation, how long shall I be with you ? How long shall I bear with you ? Bring him hither to me. And Jesus rebuked him ; and the devil went out 18 from him, and the child was cured from that hour.

Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said : 19 Why could not we cast him out ? And he said to 20 them : Because of your want of faith. For verily I say to you, if ye have faith as a grain of mustard, ye shall say to this mountain, remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove ; and nothing shall



## MATTHEW.

- 21 be impossible to you. But this kind goes not forth, except by prayer and fasting.
- 22 And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said to them : The Son of man is about to be delivered into
- 23 the hands of men ; and they will put him to death, and he will rise the third day. And they were exceeding sorry.
- 24 And when they had come to Capernaum, they that received the half-shekel came to Peter, and said :
- 25 Does not your teacher pay the half-shekel. He says, Yes. And when he had come into the house, Jesus anticipated him, saying : What thinkest thou, Simon ? Of whom do the kings of the earth take customs, or
- 26 tribute ? Of their sons, or of strangers ? He says to him : Of strangers. Jesus said to him : Then
- 27 are the sons free. But that we may not offend them, go to the sea and cast a hook, and take the fish that first comes up ; and opening its mouth thou wilt find a shekel ; that take, and give to them for me and thee

1 XVIII. AT that time came the disciples to Jesus, saying : Who then is greatest in the kingdom of heaven ?

2 And Jesus called a little child to him, and set him  
3 in the midst of them, and said : Verily I say to you, if ye do not turn and become as the little children,

---

V. 25. half-shekel ; See Exodus xxx. 13, 15.

CHAPTER XVIII.

ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoso shall receive one such little child, in my name, receives me. But whoso shall cause one of these little ones that believe in me to offend, it were better for him that an upper millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were plunged in the depth of the sea.

Woe to the world, for causes of offense! For it must needs be that causes of offense come; but woe to that man, through whom the cause of offense comes! But if thy hand or thy foot cause thee to offend, cut it off, and cast it from thee. It is better for thee to enter into life lame or maimed, than having two hands or two feet to be cast into the everlasting fire. And if thine eye cause thee to offend, pluck it out and cast it from thee. It is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell-fire.

Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say to you, that their angels in heaven do always behold the face of my Father who is in heaven. For the Son of man came to save that which was lost.

What think ye? If a man has a hundred sheep, and one of them is gone astray, does he not leave the ninety and nine upon the mountains, and go and seek that which is gone astray? And if it be that

## MATTHEW.

he find it, verily I say to you, he rejoices over it more, than over the ninety and nine that went not  
14 astray. So it is not the will of your Father who is in heaven, that one of these little ones perish.

15 But if thy brother shall sin against thee, go show him his fault between thee and him alone. If he shall  
16 hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he hear not, take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may  
17 be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it to the church ; and if he neglect to hear the church also, let him be to thee as a heathen and a pub-  
18 lican. Verily I say to you : Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven ; and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

19 Again I say to you, that if two of you shall agree on earth, concerning any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father who is in  
20 heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 Then came Peter to him, and said : Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him ?  
22 Until seven times ? Jesus says to him : I say not to thee, until seven times, but until seventy times seven.

23 Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened to a certain king, who desired to make a reckoning with  
24 his servants. And when he had begun to reckon,

## CHAPTER XVIII.

there was brought to him one, who owed ten thousand talents. But as he was not able to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant, therefore, falling prostrated himself before him, saying : Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of that servant, moved with compassion, released him, and forgave him the debt. But that servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, who owed him a hundred denáries ; and laying hold of him he took him by the throat, saying : Pay me that thou owest. Therefore his fellow-servant fell down and besought him, saying : Have patience with me, and I will pay thee. And he would not ; but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told to their lord all that was done. Then having called him, his lord says to him : Thou wicked servant ; I forgave thee all that debt, because thou besoughtest me. Shouldest not thou also have had pity on thy fellow-servant, as I too had pity on thee ? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due to him. So also will my heavenly Father do to you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother.

---

V. 28. Denáry,  $7\frac{1}{2}$  *d.* sterling, or 15 cents.

MATTHEW.

- 1 XIX. AND it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these sayings; that he departed from Galilee, and  
2 came into the borders of Judea beyond the Jordan. And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.
- 3 And the Pharisees came to him, tempting him and saying : Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause ?
- 4 And he answering said to them : Have ye not read, that he who made them from the beginning  
5 made them male and female ; and said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave  
6 to his wife, and the two shall be one flesh. So that they are no longer two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder.
- 7 They say to him : Why then did Moses command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put  
8 her away ? He says to them : Moses, for your hardness of heart, suffered you to put away your wives ;  
9 but from the beginning it was not so. And I say to you, that whoever shall put away his wife, except for fornication, and shall marry another, commits adultery ; and whoever marries her when put away, commits adultery.
- 10 His disciples say to him : If the case of the man  
11 with the woman is so, it is not good to marry. But he said to them : Not all can receive this saying,

---

V. 4. *In some ancient copies* : who created

## CHAPTER XIX.

but they to whom it is given. For there are eunuchs, 12  
who were so born from the mother's womb ; and  
there are eunuchs, who were made eunuchs by men ;  
and there are eunuchs, who have made themselves  
eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. He  
that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

Then were brought to him little children, that he 13  
might put his hands on them and pray ; and the dis-  
ciples rebuked them. But Jesus said : Suffer the 14  
little children, and forbid them not to come to me ;  
for to such belongs the kingdom of heaven. And 15  
he laid his hands on them, and departed thence.

And, behold, one came to him and said : Teacher, 16  
what good shall I do, that I may have eternal life ?  
And he said to him : Why dost thou ask me con- 17  
cerning good ? One is the Good. But if thou de-  
sirest to enter into life, keep the commandments.  
He says to him, Which ? Jesus said : Thou shalt 18  
not kill ; Thou shalt not commit adultery ; Thou  
shalt not steal ; Thou shalt not bear false witness ;  
Honor thy father and thy mother ; and, Thou shalt 19  
love thy neighbor as thyself. The young man says 20  
to him : All these have I kept ; what do I yet lack ?  
Jesus said to him : If thou desirest to be perfect, go 21  
sell what thou hast, and give to the poor, and  
thou shalt have treasure in heaven ; and come, fol-  
low me. But when the young man heard that say- 22  
ing, he went away sorrowful ; for he had great  
possessions.

## MATTHEW.

23 Then said Jesus to his disciples : Verily I say to  
you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the king-  
24 dom of heaven. And again I say to you, It is  
easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle,  
than for a rich man to enter into the kingdóm of  
25 God. And the disciples, hearing it, were exceedingly  
amazed, saying : Who then can be saved? But  
26 Jesus, looking on them, said to them : With men this  
is impossible ; but with God all things are possible.  
27 Then answered Peter and said to him : Behold,  
we have forsaken all, and followed thee ; what then  
28 shall we have ? And Jesus said to them : Verily I  
say to you, that ye who have followed me, in the  
renovation when the Son of man shall sit on his  
throne of glory, ye also shall sit on twelve thrones,  
29 judging the twelve tribes of Israel. And every one  
that has forsaken houses, or brothers, or sisters, or  
father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for  
my name's sake, shall receive manifold more, and  
30 shall inherit everlasting life. But many first shall  
be last, and last first.

1 XX. FOR the kingdom of heaven is like to a house-  
holder, who went out early in the morning to hire  
2 laborers into his vineyard. And having agreed with  
the laborers for a denáry a day, he sent them into  
his vineyard.

---

V. 2. Denáry, (18: 28), about one third more than the daily pay of a Roman soldier.

## CHAPTER XX.

And he went out about the third hour, and saw 3  
others standing idle in the market place. And to 4  
them he said : Go ye also into the vineyard, and  
whatever is right I will give you. And they went  
their way.

Again he went out about the sixth and ninth 5  
hour, and did likewise.

And about the eleventh he went out, and found 6  
others standing, and says to them : Why stand ye  
here all the day idle ? They say to him : Because 7  
no one has hired us. He says to them : Go ye also  
into the vineyard.

So when evening was come, the lord of the vine- 8  
yard says to his steward : Call the laborers, and  
pay them the hire, beginning from the last unto the  
first. And they of the eleventh hour came, and re- 9  
ceived every man a denáry. But when the first 10  
came, they supposed that they should receive more ;  
and they also received every man a denáry. And 11  
when they had received it, they murmured against  
the householder, saying : These last have wrought 12  
one hour, and thou hast made them equal to us, who  
have borne the burden of the day, and the burning  
heat.

But he answered and said to one of them : Friend, 13  
I do thee no wrong. Didst thou not agree with me  
for a denáry ? Take what is thine, and go thy way. 14  
But I will give to this last, even as to thee. Is it 15



## MATTHEW.

not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own?  
Is thine eye evil, because I am good?

16 So the last shall be first, and the first last; for many are called, but few are chosen.

17 And Jesus going up to Jerusalem took the twelve  
18 disciples apart; and in the way he said to them: Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man will be delivered to the chief priests and  
19 scribes, and they will condemn him to death, and will deliver him to the Gentiles to mock and scourge and crucify; and on the third day he will rise again.

20 Then came to him the mother of the sons of Zebedee, with her sons, bowing down and asking a certain thing of him. And he said to her: What wilt thou? She says to him: Command that these my two sons shall sit, one on thy right hand, and one  
22 on thy left, in thy kingdom. But Jesus answered and said: Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of? They  
23 say to him: We are able. And he says to them: Ye shall drink indeed of my cup; but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but is for them for whom it has been prepared by  
24 my Father. And the ten, hearing it, were much  
25 displeased with the two brothers. But Jesus called them to him, and said: Ye know that the rulers of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them, and they  
26 that are great exercise authority over them. Not so shall it be among you; but whoever would become

## CHAPTER XXI.

great among you, let him be your minister ; and 27  
whoever would be first among you, let him be your  
servant. Even as the Son of man came not to be 28  
ministered to, but to minister, and to give his life a  
ransom for many.

And as they were going forth from Jericho, a 29  
great multitude followed him. And behold, two 30  
blind men sitting by the way-side, when they heard  
that Jesus was passing by, cried, saying : Have  
mercy on us, O Lord, Son of David. And the mul- 31  
titude rebuked them, that they should hold their  
peace. But they cried the more, saying : Have  
mercy on us, O Lord, Son of David. And Jesus 32  
stood still, and called them, and said : What will ye  
that I shall do to you ? They say to him : Lord, 33  
that our eyes may be opened. And Jesus, moved 34  
with compassion, touched their eyes ; and immedi-  
ately their eyes received sight ; and they followed  
him.

XXI. AND when they drew near to Jerusalem, 1  
and came to Bethphage, at the mount of the Olives,  
Jesus sent forth two disciples, saying to them : Go 2  
into the village over against you, and straightway  
ye will find an ass tied, and a colt with her ; loose  
and bring them to me. And if any one say aught 3  
to you, ye shall say : The Lord has need of them ;  
and straightway he will send them.

Now all this has been done, that it might be fulfilled 4

MATTHEW.

- 5 which was spoken through the prophet, saying : Say  
to the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy King comes  
to thee, meek, and mounted upon an ass, and upon  
6 a colt the foal of a beast of burden. And the dis-  
7 ciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them ; and  
brought the ass and the colt, and put on them their  
8 garments, and he sat thereon. And most of the  
multitude spread their own garments in the way ;  
and others cut down branches from the trees, and  
9 strewed in the way. And the multitudes that went  
before, and that followed, cried, saying : Hosanna  
to the Son of David ; Blessed is he that comes in  
10 the name of the Lord ; Hosanna in the highest. And  
when he had entered into Jerusalem, all the city  
11 was moved, saying : Who is this ? And the multi-  
tudes said : This is Jesus the prophet, from Naza-  
reth of Galilee.
- 12 And Jesus<sup>s</sup> went into the temple of God, and cast  
out all that sold and bought in the temple, and over-  
turned the tables of the money-changers, and the  
13 seats of them that sold doves. And he says to them :  
It is written, My house shall be called a house of  
prayer ; but ye have made it a den of robbers.
- 14 And the blind and the lame came to him in the  
15 temple, and he healed them. But when the chief  
priests and scribes saw the wonders that he did, and  
the children crying in the temple, and saying, Ho-

---

. V. 9. Hosanna : *i. e.*, Save now !

## CHAPTER XXI.

sanna to the Son of David, they were sore displeased. And they said to him : Hearst thou what these 16 say? And Jesus says to them, Yea ; have ye never read : Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou has prepared praise?

And he left them, and went forth out of the city 17 into Bethany, and lodged there.

Now in the morning, as he returned into the city, 18 he hungered. And seeing a fig-tree by the way, he 19 came to it, and found nothing thereon but leaves only. And he says to it : Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward, for ever. And immediately the fig-tree withered away. And the disciples seeing it 20 wondered, saying : How did the fig-tree immediately wither away? And Jesus answering said to them : 21 Verily I say to you, if ye have faith, and do not doubt, not only shall ye do what is done to the fig-tree, but even if ye say to this mountain, Be thou taken up and cast into the sea, it shall be done. And all things whatsoever ye ask in prayer, believ- 22 ing, ye shall receive.

And when he had come into the temple, the chief 23 priests and the elders of the people came to him as he was teaching, and said : By what authority doest thou these things? And who gave thee this authority? And Jesus answered and said to them : I 24 also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I too will tell you by what authority I do these things.

MATTHEW.

- 25 John's immersion, whence was it? From heaven,  
or from men? And they reasoned among them-  
selves, saying : If we say, From heaven, he will say  
26 to us : Why then did ye not believe him? But if  
we say, From men, we fear the multitude ; for all  
27 hold John as a prophet. And they answered Jesus,  
and said : We do not know. And he said to them :  
Neither tell I you by what authority I do these  
things.
- 28 But what think ye? A man had two sons ; and  
he came to the first, and said : Son, go work to day  
29 in the vineyard. He answered and said, I will not ;  
30 but afterwards he repented, and went. And he  
came to the other, and said likewise. And he an-  
31 swered and said, I will, sir ; and went not. Which  
of the two did the father's will? They say to him,  
The first. Jesus says to them : Verily I say to you,  
that the publicans and the harlots go into the king-  
32 dom of God before you. For John came to you in  
the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not ;  
but the publicans and the harlots believed him ; and  
ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterwards,  
that ye might believe him.
- 33 Hear another parable. There was a householder,  
who planted a vineyard, and put a hedge around it,  
and dug a winepress in it, and built a tower,

---

V. 30. *In some ancient copies :* to the second

V. 31. *In the oldest copies :* they say to him, The tardier one

## CHAPTER XXI.

and let it out to husbandmen, and went abroad.  
And when the season of fruits drew' near, he 34  
sent his servants to the husbandmen, to receive  
his fruits. And the husbandmen taking his ser- 35  
vants, beat one, and killed another, and stoned  
another. Again he sent other servants, more 36  
than the first; and they did to them likewise.  
And afterward he sent to them his son, saying: 37  
They will reverence my son. But when the hus- 38  
bandmen saw the son, they said among themselves:  
This is the heir; come, let us kill him and have his  
inheritance. And they took, and cast him out of 39  
the vineyard, and slew him. When therefore the 40  
lord of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those  
husbandmen? They say to him: He will miser- 41  
ably destroy those wicked men, and will let out the  
vineyard to other husbandmen, who will render to  
him the fruits in their seasons. Jesus says to them: 42  
Did ye never read in the Scriptures, The stone which  
the builders disallowed, the same is become the  
head of the corner; this is from the Lord, and is  
wonderful in our eyes! Therefore I say to you, 43  
that the kingdom of God shall be taken from you,  
and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits  
thereof. And he that falls upon this stone will be 44  
broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will  
grind him to powder.

And the chief priests and Pharisees, hearing his 45  
parables, knew that he spake of them. And they 46

## MATTHEW.

sought to lay hands on him, but feared the multitudes, because they held him as a prophet.

- 1 XXII. AND Jesus answered and spake to them again in parables, saying :
- 2 The kingdom of heaven is like to a certain king,  
3 who made a marriage for his son. And he sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to  
4 the wedding ; and they would not come. Again he sent forth other servants, saying : Tell them that are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner ; my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things  
5 are ready ; come to the marriage. But they made light of it, and went away, one to his farm, another  
6 to his merchandise. And the rest laid hold of his  
7 servants, and ill-treated and slew them. And the king hearing it was wroth, and sent forth his armies and destroyed those murderers, and burned  
8 up their city. Then says he to his servants : The wedding is ready, but they that were bidden were  
9 not worthy. Go therefore into the thoroughfares, and as many as ye find, bid to the marriage.  
10 So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good ; and the wedding was furnished with guests.  
11 And the king, coming in to view the guests, saw there a man who had not on a wedding garment ;  
12 and says to him : Friend, how camest thou in

## CHAPTER XXII.

hither, not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. Then the king said to the attend- 13  
ants: Bind him hand and foot, and cast him forth  
into the outer darkness. There shall be weeping  
and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but 14  
few are chosen.

Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how 15  
they might ensnare him with a word. And they 16  
send out to him their disciples with the Herodi-  
ans, saying: Teacher, we know that thou art true,  
and teachest the way of God in truth; neither  
carest thou for any one, for thou regardest not the  
person of men. Tell us therefore, what thinkest 17  
thou? Is it lawful to give tribute to Cæsar, or not?  
But Jesus, knowing their wickedness, said: Why 18  
tempt ye me, hypocrites! Show me the tribute 19  
money. And they brought to him a denáry. And 20  
he says to them: Whose is this image, and the in-  
scription? They say to him, Cæsar's. Then says 21  
he to them: Render therefore to Cæsar the things  
that are Cæsar's, and to God the things that are  
God's. And hearing it they wondered, and left him 22  
and went away.

On that day came to him Sadducees, who say that 23  
there is no resurrection, and asked him, saying:  
Teacher, Moses said, If any one die having no chil- 24  
dren, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up  
seed to his brother. Now there were with us seven 25  
brothers; and the first married and died, and having



MATTHEW.

26 no seed left his wife to his brother. Likewise the  
27 second also, and the third, unto the seventh. And  
28 last of all the woman died also. In the resurrection  
therefore, of which of the seven shall she be  
wife? For they all had her.

29 Jesus answered and said to them: Ye err, not  
knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.  
30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are  
given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in  
31 heaven. But concerning the resurrection of the  
dead, have ye not read that which was spoken to  
32 you by God, saying: I am the God of Abraham, and  
the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is  
33 not the God of the dead, but of the living. And  
when the multitude heard it, they were astonished  
at his teaching.

34 Now the Pharisees, hearing that he had put the  
35 Sadducees to silence, collected together; and one  
of them, a lawyer, asked, tempting him and saying:  
36 Teacher, what commandment is great in the law?  
37 Jesus said to him: Thou shalt love the Lord thy  
God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and  
38 with all thy mind. This is the great and first com-  
39 mandment. And the second is like to it: Thou  
40 shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. On these two  
commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

41 While the Pharisees were collected together,  
42 Jesus asked them, saying: What think ye concern-  
ing the Christ? Of whom is he the son? They say

## CHAPTER XXIII.

to him : Of David. He says to them : How then 43  
does David, in the Spirit, call him Lord, saying :  
The Lord said to my Lord, sit thou on my right 44  
hand, till I put thine enemies under thy feet? If 45  
then David calls him Lord, how is he his son?  
And no one was able to answer him a word ; nor 46  
durst any one from that day question him any more.

XXIII. THEN spake Jesus to the multitudes, 1  
and to his disciples, saying : The scribes and the 2  
Pharisees sit in Moses' seat. All, therefore, whatso- 3  
ever they bid you, do and observe ; but do not accord-  
ing to their works, for they say and do not. For they 4  
bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and  
lay them on men's shoulders, but will not move them  
with their finger. But all their works they do to 5  
be seen by men ; they make broad their phylacteries,  
and enlarge the fringes ; and love the first place at 6  
feasts, and the first seats in the synagogues, and the 7  
greetings in the markets, and to be called by men,  
Rabbi, Rabbi. But be not ye called Rabbi ; for 8  
one is your Teacher, and all ye are brethren. And 9  
call not any your father on the earth ; for one is  
your Father, he who is in heaven. Neither be called 10  
leaders ; for one is your leader, the Christ. But the 11  
greatest of you shall be your servant. And who- 12

---

V. 7. Rabbi (*my Master*), a Jewish title of respect, given to a teacher.

## MATTHEW.

ever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

13 But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for ye go not in, nor suffer them that are entering to go in.

15 Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more a child of hell than yourselves.

16 Woe to you, blind guides, who say: Whoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor. Fools and blind; for which is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifies the gold? And, 17  
18 Whoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whoever shall swear by the gift that is upon it, 19  
19 he is a debtor. Fools and blind; for which is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifies the gift?

20 He therefore that swears by the altar, swears by 21  
21 it, and by all things thereon. And he that swears by the temple, swears by it, and by him that dwells 22  
22 therein. And he that swears by heaven, swears by the throne of God, and by him that sits thereon.

23 Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!

---

V. 14. is wanting here, in the oldest copies; it belongs to Mark 12: 40, and Luke 20: 47.

## CHAPTER XXIII.

because ye pay tithe of the mint and the dill and the cumin, and have omitted the weightier things of the law, judgment, and mercy, and faith; these ought ye to have done, and not to leave those undone.

Blind guides! that strain out the gnat, and swallow the camel. 24

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! 25 because ye make clean the outside of the cup and the platter, but within they are full of rapacity and excess. Blind Pharisee! cleanse first the inside of 26 the cup and the platter, that its outside also may become clean.

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! 27 because ye are like to whited sepulchres, which outwardly indeed appear beautiful, but within are full of bones of the dead, and of all uncleanness. So also 28 ye outwardly indeed appear righteous to men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! 29 because ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and adorn the tombs of the righteous, and say: If we 30 had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. So that ye witness to yourselves, that ye 31 are sons of them that killed the prophets; and fill 32 ye up the measure of your fathers!

Serpents! Brood of vipers! how can ye escape 33 the judgment of hell?

MATTHEW.

34 Therefore, behold, I send forth to you prophets,  
and wise men, and scribes; and some of them ye  
will kill and crucify, and some of them ye will  
scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from city  
35 to city. That on you may come all the righteous  
blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of right-  
eous Abel to the blood of Zechariah, son of Bara-  
chiah, whom ye slew between the temple and the  
36 altar. Verily I say to you, all these things shall  
come upon this generation.

37 Jerusalem! Jerusalem! that killeth the prophets,  
and stoneth those sent to her; how often would I  
have gathered thy children together, as a hen gath-  
ers her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!  
38 Behold, your house is left to you desolate. For I  
39 say to you, ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye  
shall say: Blessed is he that comes in the name of  
the Lord.

1 XXIV. AND Jesus went out, and departed from  
the temple; and his disciples came to him, to show  
2 him the buildings of the temple. And he answer-  
ing said to them: See ye not all these things?  
Verily I say to you, there shall not be left here one  
stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.  
3 And as he sat on the mount of the Olives, the  
disciples came to him privately, saying: Tell us,

---

V. 37. *In some ancient copies: sent to thee*

## CHAPTER XXIV.

when will these things be, and what is the sign of thy coming and of the end of the world? And 4  
Jesus answered and said to them: Take heed, lest any one lead you astray. For many shall come in 5  
my name, saying, I am the Christ; and shall lead astray many. And ye shall hear of wars, and ru- 6  
mors of wars. Take heed, be not troubled; for all must come to pass; but not yet is the end! For 7  
nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. But all these are 8  
the beginning of sorrows. Then shall they deliver 9  
you up unto affliction, and shall kill you; and ye shall be hated by all nations for my name's sake. And then shall many be offended, and shall deliver 10  
up one another, and shall hate one another. And 11  
many false prophets shall arise, and shall lead many astray. And because iniquity abounds, the love of 12  
the many shall become cold. But he that has endured 13  
to the end, the same shall be saved. And this good 14  
news of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a testimony to all nations; and then shall come the end.

When therefore ye see the abomination of desolation, spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (let him that readeth mark!) then let those in Judea flee to the mountains; 16

---

V. 6. *In some ancient copies*: for it must come to pass

## MATTHEW.

- 17 he that is upon the house, let him not come down to  
18 take the things out of his house ; and he that is in  
the field, let him not turn back to take his garments.  
19 But woe to them that are with child, and to them  
20 that give suck in those days ! And pray that  
21 your flight be not in winter, nor on a sabbath. For  
then shall be great affliction, such as has not been  
from the beginning of the world until now, no nor  
22 shall be. And unless those days were shortened, no  
flesh would be saved ; but for the sake of the chosen,  
23 those days shall be shortened. Then if any one say  
to you, Lo, here is the Christ, or here, believe it not.  
24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false proph-  
ets, and shall show great signs and wonders ; so as,  
25 if possible, to lead even the chosen astray. Behold,  
I have told you before.
- 26 If therefore they say to you : Behold, he is in the  
desert, go not forth ; behold, he is in the secret  
27 chambers, believe it not. For as the lightning  
comes forth from the east, and shines even unto the  
west, so shall be the coming of the Son of man  
28 For wherever the carcass is, there will the eagles be  
gathered together.
- 29 And immediately, after the affliction of those  
days, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall  
not give her light, and the stars shall fall from  
heaven, and the powers of heaven shall be shaken.  
30 And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man

## CHAPTER XXIV.

in heaven ; and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and shall see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven, with power and great glory.

And he will send his angels with a great sound of 31  
a trumpet, and they shall gather together his chosen  
from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the  
other.

Now learn the parable from the fig tree : When its 32  
branch is already become tender, and puts forth leaves,  
ye know that summer is near. So also ye, when ye 33  
see all these things, know that it is near, at the door.

Verily I say to you, this generation shall not, 34  
pass till all these things are done. Heaven and 35  
earth shall pass away ; but my words shall not pass  
away.

But of that day and hour no one knows, not even 36  
the angels of heaven, but my Father only. But as 37  
the days of Noah, so shall be also the coming of  
the Son of man. For as they were in the days be- 38  
fore the flood, eating and drinking, marrying and  
giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered  
into the ark, and knew not until the flood came, and 39  
took all away ; so shall be also the coming of the  
Son of man. Then shall there be two men in the 40  
field, one is taken, and one is left ; two women 41  
grinding at the mill, one is taken, and one is left.



MATTHEW.

42 Watch therefore; for ye know not in what day  
43 your Lord comes. But know this, that if the mas-  
ter of the house had known in what watch the thief  
would come, he would have watched, and would not  
have suffered his house to be broken through.  
44 Therefore be ye also ready; for in such an hour  
as ye think not the Son of man comes.

45 Who then is the faithful and wise servant, whom  
his lord set over his household, to give them their  
46 food in due season? Happy that servant, whom his  
47 lord when he comes shall find so doing! Verily I  
say to you, that he will set him over all his goods.  
48 But if that evil servant shall say in his heart,  
49 My lord delays his coming; and shall begin to beat  
his fellow-servants, and shall eat and drink with the  
50 drunken; the lord of that servant will come in a  
day when he looks not for it, and in an hour when  
51 he is not aware; and will cut him asunder, and ap-  
point his portion with the hypocrites. There shall  
be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

1 XXV. THEN shall the kingdom of heaven be  
likened to ten virgins, who took their lamps, and  
2 went out to meet the bridegroom. And five of them  
3 were wise, and five foolish. They that were foolish  
4 took their lamps, and took no oil with them; but  
the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps.  
5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered

---

V. 42. *In many ancient copies, in what hour*

## CHAPTER XXV.

and slept. And at midnight a cry was made : Be- 6  
hold, the bridegroom ! go out to meet him. Then 7  
all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps.  
And the foolish said to the wise : Give us of your 8  
oil, for our lamps are going out. But the wise an- 9  
swered, saying, Not so ; there will not be enough  
for us and you. Go rather to them that sell, and  
buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, 10  
the bridegroom came ; and they that were ready  
went in with him to the marriage ; and the door  
was shut. Afterward came also the rest of the vir- 11  
gins, saying : Lord, Lord, open to us. But he an- 12  
swered and said : Verily I say to you I know you  
not.

Watch therefore ; for ye know not the day, nor 13  
the hour !

For as a man going abroad called his own ser- 14  
vants, and delivered to them his goods ; and to one 15  
gave five talents, to another two, and to another  
one, to each according to his own ability ; and  
straightway went abroad. Then he that received 16  
the five talents went and traded with them, and  
gained other five talents. Likewise also he that re- 17  
ceived the two gained other two. But he that re- 18  
ceived the one went away and digged in the earth,  
and hid his lord's money. After a long time the 19  
lord of those servants comes, and reckons with them.  
And he that received the five talents came and 20  
brought other five talents, saying : Lord, thou de-

MATTHEW.

liveredst to me five talents ; behold, I have gained  
21 other five talents beside them. His lord said to  
him : Well done, good and faithful servant ; thou  
wast faithful over a little, I will set thee over much.  
22 Enter thou into the joy of thy lord. And he also  
that received the two talents came and said : Lord,  
thou deliveredst to me two talents ; behold, I have  
23 gained other two talents beside them. His lord  
said to him : Well done, good and faithful servant ;  
thou wast faithful over a little, I will set thee over  
24 much. Enter thou into the joy of thy lord. And  
he also that received the one talent came and said :  
Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reap-  
ing where thou hast not sown, and gathering where  
25 thou hast not strewed. And fearing, I went and  
hid thy talent in the earth. Lo, thou hast thine  
26 own. And his lord answering said to him : Wicked  
and slothful servant ! Thou knewest that I reap  
where I sowed not, and gather where I have not  
27 strewed ? Thou oughtest therefore to have put my  
money to the exchangers ; and when I came, I  
28 should have received mine own with interest. Take  
therefore the talent from him, and give to him that  
29 has the ten talents. For to every one that hath  
shall be given, and he shall have abundance ; but  
from him that hath not, even what he hath shall be  
30 taken away. And cast forth the unprofitable serv-  
ant into the outer darkness. There shall be weep-  
ing and gnashing of teeth.

## CHAPTER XXV.

When the Son of man shall come in his glory, 31  
and all the angels with him, then shall he sit on his  
throne of glory. And before him shall be gathered 32  
all the nations; and he shall divide them one from  
another, as the shepherd divides the sheep from the  
goats. And he shall set the sheep on his right 33  
hand, but the goats on the left.

Then shall the King say to those on his right 34  
hand: Come, blessed of my Father, inherit the  
kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of  
the world. For I was hungry, and ye gave me to 35  
eat; I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink; I was a  
stranger and ye took me in, naked and ye clothed 36  
me; I was sick, and ye visited me; I was in prison,  
and ye came to me.

Then shall the righteous answer him, saying: 37  
Lord, when saw we thee hungering and fed thee, or  
thirsting and gave thee drink? And when saw we 38  
thee a stranger and took thee in, or naked and  
clothed thee? And when saw we thee sick, or in 39  
prison, and came to thee? And the King shall an- 40  
swer and say to them: Verily I say to you, inas-  
much as ye did it to one of the least of these my  
brethren, ye did it to me.

Then shall he say also to those on the left hand: 41  
Depart from me, accursed, into the everlasting fire,  
prepared for the Devil and his angels. For I was 42  
hungry, and ye did not give me to eat; I was

MATTHEW.

- 43 thirsty, and ye did not give me drink ; I was a stranger, and ye did not take me in ; naked, and ye did not clothe me ; sick, and in prison, and ye did not visit me.
- 44 Then shall they also answer, saying : Lord, when saw we thee hungering, or thirsting, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister
- 45 to thee ? Then shall he answer them, saying : Verily I say to you, inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.
- 46 And these shall go away into everlasting punishment, but the righteous into everlasting life.

- 1 XXVI. AND it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said to his disciples :
- 2 Ye know that after two days comes the passover, and the Son of man is delivered up to be crucified.
- 3 Then assembled together the chief priests, and the elders of the people, in the court of the high priest,
- 4 who was called Caiaphas, and consulted together that they might take Jesus by craft, and put him to
- 5 death. But they said : Not at the feast, that there may not be a tumult among the people.
- 6 And Jesus being in Bethany, in the house of
- 7 Simon the leper, there came to him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and
- 8 poured it on his head as he reclined at table. And his disciples seeing it were displeased, saying : To
- 9 what purpose is this waste ? For this might have

## CHAPTER XXVI.

been sold for much, and given to the poor. And 10  
Jesus knowing it, said to them: Why trouble ye  
the woman? For she has wrought a good work  
upon me. For the poor ye have always with you; 11  
but me ye have not always. For she, in pouring 12  
this ointment on my body, did it to prepare me for  
burial. Verily I say to you, wheresoever this good 13  
news shall be preached in the whole world, this also  
that she has done shall be told, for a memorial of  
her.

Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, 14  
went to the chief priests, and said: What will ye 15  
give me, and I will deliver him to you? And they  
weighed out to him thirty pieces of silver. And 16  
from that time he sought opportunity to deliver  
him up.

Now on the first day of the feast of unleavened 17  
bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying to him:  
Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the  
passover? And he said: Go into the city to such 18  
a man, and say to him, The Teacher says, my time  
is at hand; I will keep the passover at thy house  
with my disciples. And the disciples did as Jesus 19  
directed them, and made ready the passover.

And when evening was come, he reclined at table 20  
with the twelve. And as they were eating, he 21  
said: Verily I say to you, that one of you will be-  
tray me. And they were exceeding sorrowful, and 22  
began each one to say to him, Lord, is it I? And 23

MATTHEW.

- he answered and said : He that dipped his hand  
24 with me in the dish, the same will betray me. The  
Son of man goes indeed, as it is written of him ; but  
woe to that man through whom the Son of man is  
betrayed ! It were good for him, if that man had  
not been born.
- 25 And Judas, his betrayer, answered and said :  
Rabbi, is it I ? He says to him : Thou hast said  
it.
- 26 And as they were eating, Jesus took the bread,  
and blessed, and brake, and gave to the disciples,  
27 and said : Take, eat ; this is my body. And he  
took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave to them,  
28 saying : Drink all ye of it. For this is my blood  
of the new covenant, which is shed for many, for re-  
29 mission of sins. And I say to you, that I will not  
drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that  
day when I drink it new with you in the kingdom  
of my Father.
- 30 And having sung, they went out into the mount  
of the Olives.
- 31 Then says Jesus to them : All ye will be offend-  
ed because of me this night. For it is written : I  
will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep of the flock  
32 shall be scattered abroad. But after I am risen, I  
will go before you into Galilee.

---

V. 26. *In some ancient copies* : took bread

V. 28. *In some ancient copies* : of the covenant

## CHAPTER XXVI.

Peter answered and said to him : Though all 33 shall be offended because of thee, I will never be offended. Jesus said to him : Verily I say to thee, 34 that this night, before the cock crows, thou wilt thrice deny me. Peter says to him : Even though I 35 should die with thee, I will not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.

Then Jesus comes with them to a place called 36 Gethsemane, and says to the disciples : Sit ye here, while I go yonder and pray. And taking with him 37 Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, he began to be sorrowful, and to be troubled. Then says he to 38 to them : My soul is exceeding sorrowful, unto death. Tarry ye here, and watch with me.

And going forward a little, he fell on his face 39 praying, and saying : My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass away from me. But yet, not as I will, but as thou wilt. And he comes to the 40 disciples, and finds them sleeping ; and he says to Peter : Were ye so unable to watch with me one hour ? Watch and pray, that ye enter not into 41 temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

Again, a second time, he went away and prayed, 42 saying : My Father, if this can not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done. And com- 43 ing he again found them sleeping ; for their eyes were heavy.

And leaving them, he went away again, and pray- 44



MATTHEW.

45 ed the third time, saying the same words. Then comes he to his disciples, and says to them : Sleep on now, and take your rest ! Behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let us be going. Behold, he is at hand that  
47 betrays me. And while he was yet speaking, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the  
48 chief priests and elders of the people. Now his betrayer gave them a sign, saying : Whom I shall  
49 kiss, that is he ; hold him fast. And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, Rabbi ; and kissed  
50 him. And Jesus said to him : Friend, wherefore art thou come ? Then came they, and laid hands  
51 on Jesus, and held him fast. And, behold, one of them that were with Jesus stretched out his hand and drew his sword, and struck the servant of the high  
52 priest, and took off his ear. Then said Jesus to him : Put back thy sword into its place ; for all they that  
53 take the sword shall perish with the sword. Thinkest thou that I can not now pray to my Father, and he will send me more than twelve legions of  
54 angels ? How then shall the Scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be ?

---

V. 45. *Or*, Sleep ye the remaining time, and take your rest ?

V. 53. *In some ancient copies* : that I can not pray to my Father, and he will now send

## CHAPTER XXVI.

In that hour Jesus said to the multitudes : Are ye come out as against a robber with swords and staves, to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye did not lay hold of me. But all this has been done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then the disciples all forsook him, and fled.

And they that had laid hold of Jesus led him away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled. And Peter followed him afar off unto the court of the high priest; and he went in, and sat with the servants, to see the end.

Now the chief priests, and the elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus, that they might put him to death; and found none, though many false witnesses came. But at last came two, and said : This man said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days. And the high priest arose, and said to him : Answerest thou nothing? What do these witness against thee? But Jesus was silent. And the high priest answering said to him : I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou art the Christ, the Son of God. Jesus says to him : Thou hast said it. But I say to you : Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming on the clouds of heaven. Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying : He has

## MATTHEW.

spoken blasphemy ; what further need have we of witnesses ? Behold, ye have now heard his blasphemy.

66 What think ye ? They answered and said : He is  
67 guilty of death. Then spit they in his face, and buffeted him ; and others smote him, saying :  
68 Prophecy to us, O Christ, who is he that struck thee ?

69 Now Peter was sitting without in the court. And a damsel came to him, saying : Thou also wast  
70 with Jesus the Galilean. But he denied before all,  
71 saying : I know not what thou sayest. And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said to them that were there : This man  
72 also was with Jesus the Nazarene. And again he  
73 denied with an oath, I do not know the man. And after a little while, they that stood by came and said to Peter : Surely thou also art one of them ; for  
74 thy speech betrays thee. Then began he to invoke curses, and to swear, I know not the man. And  
75 immediately the cock crowed. And Peter remembered the word of Jesus when he said : Before the cock crows, thou wilt thrice deny me. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

1 XXVII. AND when morning was come, all the chief priests and the elders of the people took counsel against Jesus, so as to put him to death. And having bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

Then Judas, who betrayed him, when he saw that 3  
he was condemned, repenting brought back the  
thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and the  
elders, saying : I sinned in betraying innocent blood. 4  
And they said : What is it to us ? Look thou to it.  
And casting down the pieces of silver in the temple, 5  
he departed ; and he went away and hanged himself. 6  
And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said :  
It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, since it  
is the price of blood. And they took counsel, and 7  
bought with them the potter's field, to bury strang-  
ers in. Wherefore that field was called the field of 8  
blood, unto this day.

Then was fulfilled that which was spoken through 9  
Jeremiah the prophet, saying : And they took the  
thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was  
priced, whom they of the children of Israel did  
price ; and gave them for the potter's field, as the 10  
Lord appointed to me.

And Jesus stood before the governor. And the 11  
governor questioned him, saying : Art thou the king  
of the Jews ? And Jesus said to him : Thou  
sayest it. And when he was accused by the chief 12  
priests and the elders, he made no answer. Then 13  
said Pilate to him : Hearest thou not what things  
they witness against thee ? And he made him no 14  
answer, not even to one word ; so that the governor  
greatly wondered.

Now at the feast the governor was wont to release 15

MATTHEW.

- to the multitude one prisoner, whom they would.
- 16 And they had then a noted prisoner, called Barab-  
17 bas. When therefore they were gathered together,  
Pilate said to them : Whom will ye that I release  
to you ? Barabbas, or Jesus who is called Christ ?
- 18 For he knew that for envy they had delivered him  
up.
- 19 And as he sat on the judgment seat, his wife sent  
to him, saying : Have nothing to do with that  
just man ; for I have suffered much this day in a  
dream because of him.
- 20 And the chief priests and the elders persuaded  
the multitudes, that they should ask for Barabbas,  
21 and should destroy Jesus. And the governor an-  
swering said to them : Which of the two will ye  
that I release to you ? And they said, Barabbas.
- 22 Pilate says to them : What then shall I do with  
Jesus, who is called Christ ? They all say to him :  
23 Let him be crucified. And the governor said :  
What evil then has he done ? But they cried the  
more, saying : Let him be crucified.
- 24 And Pilate, seeing that it avails nothing, but  
rather that a tumult is made, took water and wash-  
ed his hands before the multitude, saying : I am  
innocent of the blood of this just man. Look ye to  
25 it. And all the people answering said : His blood  
26 be on us, and on our children. Then he released to

---

V. 24. *or*, he avails nothing

## CHAPTER XXVII.

them Barabbas ; but Jesus he scourged, and delivered up to be crucified.

Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the Praetorium, and gathered to him the whole band. And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe. And having platted a crown of thorns, they put it on his head, and a reed in his right hand ; and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying : Hail, King of the Jews ! And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head. And when they had mocked him, they took off the robe from him, and put on him his own garments, and led him away to crucify him. And as they came out they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name ; him they compelled to bear his cross.

And when they were come to a place called Golgotha (which is called, Place of a skull), they gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall ; and when he had tasted, he would not drink. And having crucified him, they divided his garments among them, casting lots. And sitting down, they watched him there. And they set up over his head his accusation, written : THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

Then were two robbers crucified with him ; one on the right hand, and one on the left. And they

---

V. 34. *In some ancient copies ; gave him wine*

## MATTHEW.

that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads, and  
40 saying : Thou that destroyest the temple, and build-  
est it in three days, save thyself. If thou art the  
41 Son of God, come down from the cross. Likewise  
also the chief priests mocking, with the scribes and  
42 elders, said : He saved others, himself he can not  
save. If he is King of Israel, let him now come down  
43 from the cross, and we will believe on him. He  
trusts in God ; let him now deliver him, if he desires  
44 him ; for he said, I am the Son of God. And also,  
the robbers, who were crucified with him, reproached  
him with the same thing.

45 And from the sixth hour, there was darkness over  
46 all the land, unto the ninth hour. And about the  
ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying :  
Eli, Eli, lema sabachthani ? That is : My God, my  
47 God, why hast thou forsaken me ? Some of them  
that stood there, hearing it, said : This man calls  
48 for Elijah. And straightway one of them ran, and  
took a sponge, and having filled it with vinegar and  
49 put it on a reed, gave him to drink. But the rest  
said : Let alone ; let us see whether Elijah comes  
to save him.

50 And Jesus, again crying with a loud voice, yield-  
51 ed up his spirit. And behold, the vail of the tem-  
ple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom ;  
and the earth quaked, and the rocks were rent.

---

V. 47. Elijah: *in their form of address*, Elia

## CHAPTER XXVII.

And the graves were opened, and many bodies of the 52  
saints who slept arose; and coming out of the 53  
graves, after his resurrection, they went into the  
holy city, and appeared to many.

And when the centurion, and they that with him 54  
were watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and the  
things that were done, they were exceedingly afraid,  
saying: Truly this was the Son of God.

And many women were there beholding afar off, 55  
they who followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering  
to him; among whom was Mary the Magdalene, 56  
and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the  
mother of the sons of Zebedee.

And evening having come, there came a rich man 57  
from Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself  
was a disciple of Jesus. This man went to Pilate, 58  
and asked for the body of Jesus. Then Pilate com-  
manded that the body should be given up. And 59  
taking the body, Joseph wrapped it in a clean linen  
cloth, and laid it in his own new tomb, which he 60  
had hewn out in the rock. And he rolled a great  
stone to the door of the tomb, and departed. And 61  
Mary the Magdalene was there, and the other Mary,  
sitting over against the sepulchre.

And on the morrow, which is after the prepara- 62  
tion, the chief priests and the Pharisees came to-  
gether to Pilate, saying: Sir, we remember that 63  
that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After  
three days I will rise. Command, therefore, that 64



## MATTHEW.

the sepulchre be made secure until the third day ;  
lest his disciples come by night and steal him away,  
and say to the people, He is risen from the dead ;  
65 and the last error will be worse than the first. Pi-  
late said to them : Ye have a watch ; go your way,  
66 make secure, as ye know how. So they went, and  
made the sepulchre secure, sealing the stone, to-  
gether with the watch.

1 XXVIII. AND late in the sabbath, as it was  
dawning into the first day of the week, came Mary  
the Magdalene and the other Mary to view the  
2 sepulchre. And behold, there was a great earth-  
quake. For an angel of the Lord descended from  
heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from  
3 the door, and sat upon it. His countenance was  
4 like lightning, and his raiment white as snow. And  
for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as  
5 dead men. And the angel answered and said to the  
women : Fear not ye ; for I know that ye are seek-  
6 ing Jesus, who was crucified. He is not here ; for  
he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place where  
7 the Lord lay. And go quickly, and tell his disci-  
ples that he is risen from the dead. And behold,  
he goes before you into Galilee ; there shall ye see  
him. Behold, I have told you.  
8 And going out quickly from the sepulchre, with  
fear and great joy, they ran to bring his disciples  
9 word. And behold, Jesus met them, saying : All

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

hail! And they came and held him by the feet, and worshiped him. Then said Jesus to them : Be not 10 afraid ; go tell my brethren that they go away into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

And as they were going, behold, some of the 11 watch came into the city, and reported to the chief priests all the things that were done. And having 12 assembled with the elders, and taken counsel, they gave much money to the soldiers, saying : Say, 13 that his disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. And if this shall be heard before 14 the governor, we will persuade him, and make you secure. So they took the money, and did as they 15 were taught. And this saying was reported abroad among the Jews, until this day.

And the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, 16 into the mountain where Jesus had appointed them. And when they saw him, they worshiped him ; but 17 some doubted.

And Jesus came and spake to them, saying : All 18 power is given to me in heaven and on earth. Go 19 therefore, and disciple all the nations, immersing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit ; teaching them to observe 20 all things whatsoever I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, unto the end of the world.

---

V. 14. *In the oldest copies* : shall be heard by the governor



# THE GOSPEL

ACCORDING TO

## M A R K.

---

### CHAPTER I.

THE beginning of the good news of Jesus Christ, 1  
Son of God. As it is written in Isaiah the prophet : 2  
Behold, I send forth my messenger before thy face,  
who shall prepare thy way. The voice of one cry- 3  
ing in the wilderness : Prepare the way of the Lord,  
make straight his paths. John came immersing in 4  
the wilderness, and preaching the immersion of re-  
pentance for the remission of sins. And there went 5  
out to him all the country of Judea, and all they of  
Jerusalem ; and were immersed by him in the river  
Jordan, confessing their sins.

And John was clothed with camel's hair, and 6  
with a leathern girdle about his loins, and did eat  
locusts and wild honey. And he preached, saying : 7  
There comes after me he that is mightier than I,  
the latchet of whose sandals I am not worthy to

---

V. 4. *In some ancient copies* : There came John the immer-  
ser in the wilderness, preaching

MARK.

- 8 stoop down and unloose. I indeed immersed you  
in water; but he will immerse you in the Holy  
Spirit.
- 9 And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus  
came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was immersed  
10 by John in the Jordan. And straightway coming  
up out of the water, he saw the heavens parted, and  
11 the Spirit as a dove descending upon him. And  
there came a voice out of heaven: Thou art my be-  
loved son; in thee I am well pleased.
- 12 And immediately the Spirit drives him forth into  
13 the wilderness. And he was in the wilderness forty  
days, tempted by Satan, and was with the wild  
beasts; and the angels ministered to him.
- 14 Now after John was delivered up, Jesus came  
15 into Galilee, preaching the good news of the king-  
dom of God, and saying: The time is fulfilled, and  
the kingdom of God is at hand; repent, and believe  
the good news.
- 16 And walking by the sea of Galilee, he saw Si-  
mon, and Andrew Simon's brother, casting a net in  
17 the sea; for they were fishermen. And Jesus said  
to them: Come after me, and I will cause you to  
18 become fishers of men. And straightway they for-  
sook their nets, and followed him.
- 19 And when he had gone a little further, he saw  
James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother,

---

V. 14. *In some ancient copies: the good news of God*

## CHAPTER I.

who also were in the ship, mending their nets. And 20  
straightway he called them; and they left their  
father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants,  
and went after him.

And they enter into Capernaum; and straight- 21  
way on the sabbath he went into the synagogue,  
and taught. And they were astonished at his 22  
teaching; for he taught them as having authority,  
and not as the scribes.

And there was in their synagogue a man with an 23  
unclean spirit. And he cried out, saying: What 24  
have we to do with thee, Jesus, Nazarene! Art  
thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou  
art, the Holy One of God. And Jesus rebuked him, 25  
saying: Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And 26  
the unclean spirit, tearing him, and crying with a  
loud voice, came out of him. And they were all 27  
amazed; so that they questioned among themselves,  
saying: What is this? A new teaching, with au-  
thority! And he commands the unclean spirits,  
and they obey him. And immediately his fame 28  
spread abroad into all the surrounding region of  
Galilee.

And immediately when they had come out of the 29

---

V. 24. *In some ancient copies:* Hah! what have we to do  
with thee?

V. 27. *In many ancient copies:* What new teaching is this?  
For with authority he commands even the unclean spirits

## MARK.

- synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon and  
30 Andrew, with James and John. And the mother-in-  
law of Simon lay sick of a fever ; and immediately  
31 they tell him concerning her. And he came and  
raised her up, taking hold of her hand ; and imme-  
diately the fever left her, and she ministered to them.  
32 And evening having come, when the sun was set,  
they brought to him all that were sick, and those  
33 possessed with devils. And all the city was gath-  
34 ered together at the door. And he healed many  
that were sick with divers diseases, and cast out  
many devils ; and suffered not the devils to speak,  
because they knew him.  
35 And rising very early, by night, he went out, and  
departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.  
36 And Simon and they that were with him followed  
37 after him. And having found him, they say to him :  
38 All are seeking thee. And he says to them : Let us  
go elsewhere into the neighboring towns, that I may  
preach there also ; for therefore have I come forth.  
39 And he preached in their synagogues, throughout  
all Galilee, and cast out devils.  
40 And there came a leper to him, beseeching him,  
and kneeling down to him, and saying to him : If  
41 thou wilt, thou canst cleanse me. And Jesus, moved  
with compassion, stretched forth his hand and touched  
42 him, and says to him : I will ; be thou cleansed. And  
when he had spoken, immediately the leprosy de-  
43 parted from him, and he was cleansed. And sternly

## CHAPTER II.

charging him, he forthwith sent him away ; and says 44  
to him : See thou say nothing to any one ; but go,  
show thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing  
what Moses commanded, for a testimony to them.  
But he went out, and began to publish it much, and 45  
to spread abroad the report ; so that he could no  
longer openly enter into a city, but was without in  
desert places. And they came to him from every  
quarter.

II. AND again he entered into Capernaum after 1  
some days ; and it was heard that he is in the house.  
And straightway many were gathered together, so 2  
that there was no longer room, not even at the door ;  
and he spake the word to them.

And they come to him, bringing one that was 3  
palsied, borne by four. And not being able to come 4  
near him, on account of the multitude, they uncovered  
the roof where he was ; and having broken it up,  
they let down the bed whereon the palsied man lay.  
And Jesus seeing their faith, says to the palsied 5  
man : Child, thy sins are forgiven. But there were 6  
some of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in  
their hearts : Why does this man speak thus ? He 7  
blasphemes. Who can forgive sins but one, God ? 8  
And Jesus, immediately perceiving in his spirit that  
they so reasoned within themselves, said to them :  
Why reason ye these things in your hearts ? Which 9  
is easier, to say to the palsied man, Thy sins are for-



MARK.

given ; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and  
10 walk ? But that ye may know that the Son of man  
has power on earth to forgive sins, (he says to the  
11 palsied man,) I say to thee, arise, take up thy bed,  
12 and go to thy house. And immediately he arose,  
took up the bed, and went forth before all ; so that  
all were amazed, and glorified God, saying : We  
never saw it thus.

13 And he went forth again by the sea side ; and all  
the multitude came to him, and he taught them.

14 And passing along, he saw Levi the son of Alpheus  
sitting at the receipt of custom, and said to him  
Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

15 And it came to pass, as he reclined at table in his  
house, that many publicans and sinners were reclining  
with Jesus and his disciples ; for there were many, and

16 they followed him. And when the scribes and the  
Pharisees saw him eating with the sinners and publi-  
cans, they said to his disciples : How is it that he eats  
17 and drinks with the sinners and the publicans ? And  
Jesus hearing it, says to them : They that are whole  
need not a physician, but they that are sick. I came  
not to call righteous men, but sinners.

18 And the disciples of John, and the Pharisees,  
used to fast ; and they come and say to him : Why  
do the disciples of John and the Pharisees fast, but  
19 thy disciples fast not ? And Jesus said to them :

---

V. 18. *or*, were fasting

## CHAPTER II.

Can the sons of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? So long as they have the bridegroom with them, they can not fast. But days 20 will come, when the bridegroom will be taken from them; and then shall they fast in that day. No one 21 sews a piece of unfulled cloth upon an old garment; else the new filling up of the old takes from it, and a worse rent is made. And no one puts new wine in- 22 to old skins; else the wine bursts the skins, and the wine is destroyed, and the skins.

And it came to pass, that he went through the 23 grain-fields on the sabbath; and his disciples began to go forward, plucking the ears of grain. And the 24 Pharisees said to him: Behold, why do they on the sabbath that which is not lawful? And he 25 said to them: Have ye never read what David did, when he had need and hungered, himself and they that were with him? How he went into the house of 26 God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and ate the show bread, which it is not lawful to eat but for the priests, and gave also to them that were with him? And he said to them: The sabbath was 27 made for man, and not man for the sabbath. So 28 that the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

---

V. 22. *Some ancient copies add:* But new wine must be put into new skins.

V. 23. *or,* began to make a way

MARK.

- 1 III. AND he entered again into the synagogue ;  
and there was a man there having his hand withered.  
2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him  
3 on the sabbath ; that they might accuse him. And  
he says to the man having the withered hand : Arise,  
4 and come into the midst. And he says to them : Is  
it lawful to do good on the sabbath, or to do evil ?  
to save life, or to kill ? But they held their peace.  
5 And looking round on them with anger, being  
grieved for their hardness of heart, he says to  
the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretch-  
ed it forth ; and his hand was restored.  
6 And the Pharisees went out, and straightway took  
counsel with the Herodians against him, how they  
7 might destroy him. And Jesus withdrew with his  
disciples to the sea. And a great multitude from  
8 Galilee followed ; and from Judea, and from Jeru-  
salem, and from Idumea, and from beyond the Jordan,  
and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude,  
hearing what great things he did, came to him.  
9 And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship  
should wait on him because of the multitude, that  
10 they might not throng him. For he healed many ;  
so that they pressed upon him to touch him, as  
11 many as had plagues. And the unclean spirits,  
when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried,  
12 saying : Thou art the Son of God. And he strictly  
charged them that they should not make him known.  
13 And he goes up into the mountain, and calls to

### CHAPTER III.

him whom he would ; and they went to him. And 14  
he appointed twelve, that they should be with him,  
and that he might send them forth to preach, and 15  
to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out  
devils. And Simon he surnamed Peter ; and James 16  
the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James ; 17  
and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, Sons of  
thunder ; and Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholo- 18  
mew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son  
of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canan-  
ite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him. 19

And they come into the house. And the multitude 20  
comes together again, so that they could not even  
eat bread. And hearing of it, his kinsmen went out to 21  
lay hold of him ; for they said, He is beside himself.

And the scribes who came down from Jerusalem 22  
said, He has Beelzebul, and through the prince of  
the devils he casts out the devils. And he called them 23  
to him, and said to them in parables, How can Sa-  
tan cast out Satan ? And if a kingdom be divided 24  
against itself, that kingdom can not stand. And if 25  
a house be divided against itself, that house can not  
stand. And if Satan has risen up against himself, 26  
and is divided, he can not stand, but has an end.  
No one can enter into a strong man's house, and 27  
plunder his goods, except he first bind the strong  
man ; and then he will plunder his house. Verily I say 28

---

V. 18. Cananite, (*as some suppose*) = Zelotes.

## MARK.

to you, all sins shall be forgiven the sons of men,  
and the blasphemies wherewith they shall blaspheme.  
29 But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Spirit  
has no forgiveness forever, but is guilty of eternal  
30 sin ; because they said, He has an unclean spirit.  
31 So his brothers and his mother came, and stand-  
32 ing without sent to him, calling him. And a crowd  
was sitting about him ; and they say to him, Behold,  
thy mother and thy brothers without are seeking  
33 thee. And he answered them, saying, Who is my  
34 mother, or my brothers? And looking round on  
those who sat about him, he said, Behold my mother,  
35 and my brothers ! For whosoever shall do the will  
of God, the same is my brother, and sister, and  
mother.

1 IV. AND he began again to teach by the sea-side.  
And there was gathered to him a very great multitude,  
so that he entered into a ship, and sat down in the  
sea ; and all the multitude was by the sea on the land.  
2 And he taught them many things in parables, and  
said to them in his teaching :  
3 Hearken ; behold, the sower went forth to sow.  
4 And it came to pass, as he sowed, one fell by the  
5 way side, and the fowls came and devoured it. And  
another fell on the rocky ground, where it had not  
much earth ; and immediately it sprang up, because  
6 it had not depth of earth. But when the sun was  
up, it was scorched ; and because it had not root, it

#### CHAPTER IV.

withered away. And another fell among the thorns ; 7  
and the thorns came up, and choked it, and it yield-  
ed no fruit. And another fell into the good ground, 8  
and yielded fruit that sprang up and increased ; and  
brought forth, thirty, and sixty, and a hundredfold.  
And he said : He that hath ears to hear, let him 9  
hear.

And when he was alone, they that were about 10  
him with the twelve asked him concerning the para-  
bles. And he said to them : To you is given the 11  
mystery of the kingdom of God, but to them who  
are without, all things are done in parables ;  
that seeing they may see, and not perceive, and 12  
hearing they may hear, and not understand ; lest  
haply they should turn, and be forgiven. And he 13  
says to them, Know ye not this parable ? And how  
will ye know all the parables ?

The sower sows the word. And these are they 14  
by the wayside ; where the word is sown, and when 15  
they hear, Satan comes immediately and takes away  
the word that was sown in them. And these are 16  
they likewise that are sown on the rocky places ;  
who, when they hear the word, immediately receive  
it with gladness ; and have no root in themselves, 17  
but are only for a time. Afterward, when tribula-  
tion or persecution arises because of the word, im-  
mediately they are offended. And others are they 18  
that are sown among the thorns. These are they  
that hear the word, and the cares of the world, 19

## MARK.

- and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things, entering in choke the word, and it becomes  
20 unfruitful. And these are they that are sown on the good ground ; such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, in thirty, and in sixty, and in a hundredfold.
- 21 And he said to them : Is the lamp brought that it may be put under the bushel or under a bed ? Is it  
22 not that it may be put on the lightstand ? For nothing is hidden, but it shall be manifested ; nor was  
23 done in secret, but that it should come abroad. If any one hath ears to hear, let him hear.
- 24 And he said to them, Take heed what ye hear. With what measure ye mete, it shall be measured  
25 to you, and there shall be added to you. For he that hath, to him shall be given ; and he that hath not, even what he hath shall be taken from him.
- 26 And he said : So is the kingdom of God, as when  
27 a man has cast the seed into the earth, and sleeps and rises night and day, and the seed sprouts  
28 and grows up, he knows not how. For the earth brings forth fruit of herself ; first the blade, then the  
29 ear, then the full grain in the ear. But when the fruit permits, immediately he puts forth the sickle, because the harvest is come.
- 30 And he said : How shall we liken the kingdom of God, or in what comparison shall we set it forth ?  
31 As a grain of mustard ; which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that are in the

## CHAPTER V.

earth. And when it is sown, it grows up, and be- 32  
comes greater than all the herbs, and shoots out  
great branches ; so that the fowls of the air can  
lodge under its shadow.

And with many such parables spake he the word 33  
to them, as they were able to hear. But without 34  
a parable spake he not to them ; and in private he  
explained all things to his disciples.

And on that day, when evening was come, he 35  
says to them, Let us pass over to the other side.  
And having sent away the multitude, they take him 36  
as he was in the ship. And there were also other  
ships with him. And there arose a great storm of 37  
wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that the  
ship was already becoming filled. And he was in 38  
the stern on the cushion, sleeping. And they awake  
him, and say to him : Teacher, carest thou not that  
we perish ? And awaking, he rebuked the wind, 39  
and said to the sea, Peace, be still. And the wind  
ceased, and there was a great calm. And he said 40  
to them, why are ye so fearful ? How is it that ye have  
no faith ? And they feared exceedingly, and said 41  
one to another : Who then is this, that even the  
wind and the sea obey him ?

V. AND they came to the other side of the sea, 1  
into the country of the Gerasenes. And when he 2  
had come out of the ship, immediately there met  
him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit,



## MARK.

3 who had his dwelling in the tombs ; and no one  
could any longer bind him, not even with chains.  
4 Because he had often been bound with fetters and  
chains ; and the chains had been torn asunder by  
him, and the fetters broken in pieces, and no one  
5 could tame him. And always, night and day, he  
was in the tombs, and in the mountains, crying out,  
6 and cutting himself with stones. But seeing Jesus  
7 afar off, he ran and bowed down to him, and cried  
with a loud voice, and said : What have I to do  
with thee, Jesus, Son of the most high God ? I  
8 adjure thee by God, do not torment me. For he  
said to him : Come forth, unclean spirit, out of the  
9 man. And he asked him, What is thy name ?  
And he says to him : My name is Legion ; because  
10 we are many. And he besought him much that he  
would not send them away out of the country.  
11 Now there was there, by the mountain, a great  
12 herd of swine feeding. And all the devils besought  
him, saying : Send us into the swine, that we may  
13 enter into them. And immediately Jesus gave  
them leave. And the unclean spirits came out, and  
entered into the swine. And the herd rushed down  
the steep into the sea, about two thousand, and were  
14 choked in the sea. And they that fed them fled, and  
reported it in the city and in the country. And  
15 they came to see what it was that was done. And  
they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed  
with devils, sitting, clothed and in his right mind,

## CHAPTER V.

him, who had the legion, and they were afraid. And they that saw it related to them how it befell him that was possessed with devils, and concerning the swine. And they began to beseech him to depart from their borders.

And as he was entering into the ship, he that had been possessed with devils besought him that he might be with him. And he suffered him not; but says to him: Go unto thy house, to thy friends, and report to them how great things the Lord has done for thee, and had compassion on thee. And he departed, and began to publish in the Decapolis how great things Jesus had done for him; and all marvelled.

And when Jesus had passed over again in the ship to the other side, a great multitude was gathered unto him; and he was by the sea. And there comes one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name. And seeing him, he fell at his feet, and besought him much, saying, My little daughter lies at the point of death. I pray thee come, and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed and live. And he went with him; and a great multitude followed him, and thronged him.

And a certain woman, who had a flow of blood twelve years, and had suffered much by many physicians, and spent all that she had, and was not at all profited but rather grew worse, hearing of Jesus, came in the crowd behind, and touched

MARK.

28 his garment. For she said, If I even touch his  
29 garments, I shall be made whole. And straight-  
way the fountain of her blood was dried up; and  
she perceived in her body that she was healed of  
30 that plague. And immediately Jesus, perceiving  
in himself that power had gone forth from him,  
turned about in the crowd, and said, Who touched  
31 my garments? And his disciples said to him, Thou  
seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou,  
32 Who touched me? And he looked around to  
33 see her that had done this. But the woman,  
fearing and trembling, knowing what was done to  
her, came and fell down before him, and told him all  
34 the truth. And he said to her: Daughter, thy faith  
has made thee whole; go in peace, and be healed  
of thy plague.

35 While he was yet speaking, they come from the  
ruler of the synagogue's house, saying: Thy daugh-  
ter is dead; why troublest thou the Teacher any  
36 further? And Jesus, overhearing the word that was  
spoken, says to the ruler of the synagogue: Be not  
37 afraid; only believe. And he suffered no one to  
follow with him, save Peter, and James, and John  
38 the brother of James. And they come to the house  
of the ruler of the synagogue; and he sees a tumult,  
39 and them that wept and wailed greatly. And en-  
tering in, he says to them, Why do ye make a  
tumult, and weep? The child is not dead, but  
40 sleepeth? And they laughed him to scorn. But

## CHAPTER VI.

he, putting them all out, takes the father of the child, and the mother, and them that were with him, and enters in where the child was. And 41 taking the hand of the child, he says to her : Talitha kumi ; which is interpreted, Damsel, I say to thee, arise. And straightway the damsel arose, 42 and walked ; for she was of the age of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment. And he charged them strictly that no one 43 should know this. And he commanded that something should be given her to eat.

VI. AND he went out from thence, and came 1 into his own country ; and his disciples follow him. And when the sabbath was come, he began 2 to teach in the synagogue. And many hearing were astonished, saying : From whence has this man these things ? And what is the wisdom which is given him, and such miracles wrought by his hands ? Is not this the carpenter, the son of 3 Mary, and brother of James, and Joses, and Judas, and Simon ? And are not his sisters here with us ? And they were offended at him. And Je- 4 sus said to them : A prophet is not without honor, except in his own country, and among his own kindred, and in his own house. And he was 5 not able to do any miracle there, save that he laid his hands on a few sick, and healed them. 6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And

MARK.

he went about the surrounding villages, teaching.

- 7 And he called to him the twelve, and began to  
send them forth by two and two; and gave them  
8 power over the unclean spirits; and commanded  
them that they should take nothing for the way,  
save a staff only; no bread, no bag, no money in  
9 their purse; but that they be shod with sandals;  
10 and put not on two coats. And he said to them:  
Wherever ye enter into a house, there abide till ye  
11 depart from thence. - And whatever place shall not  
receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence,  
shake off the dust under your feet for a testimony  
to them. Verily I say to you, it shall be more tol-  
erable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judg-  
12 ment, than for that city. And they went out, and  
13 preached that men should repent. And they cast  
out many devils, and anointed with oil many that  
were sick, and healed them.
- 14 And Herod the king heard of it, for his name was  
spread abroad; and he said, that John the Im-  
merser was risen from the dead, and therefore do  
15 these powers work in him. Others said, It is  
Elijah. And others said, It is a prophet, like any  
16 one of the prophets. But Herod hearing of it, said:  
John, whom I beheaded, has risen from the dead.  
17 For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold of  
John, and bound him in prison, for the sake of Hero-  
dias his brother Philip's wife; because he had married

## CHAPTER VI.

her. For John said to Herod, It is not lawful for 18  
thee to have thy brother's wife. And Herodias 19  
was angry with him, and desired to put him to  
death ; and she could not, for Herod feared John, 20  
knowing that he was a just and holy man ; and he  
observed him, and hearing him did many things, and  
heard him gladly.

And a convenient day having come, when Herod 21  
on his birthday made a supper for his nobles, and  
for the chief captains, and the first men of Galilee ;  
and the daughter of Herodias having come in 22  
and danced, it pleased Herod and those reclining  
at table with him ; and the king said to the dam-  
sel, Ask of me whatever thou wilt, and I will give  
it thee. And he sware to her, Whatever thou 23  
shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of  
my kingdom. And she went out, and said to her 24  
mother, What shall I ask ? And she said, the head  
of John the Immerser. And straightway she came 25  
in with haste to the king, and asked, saying : I will  
that immediately thou give me, on a platter, the  
head of John the Immerser. And the king became 26  
very sorrowful ; but for the sake of his oath, and of  
those reclining with him, he would not reject her.  
And immediately the king sent one of the guard, and 27  
commanded to bring his head. And he went  
and beheaded him in the prison, and brought his 28  
head on a platter, and gave it to the damsel ; and

---

V. 20. *or, and he kept him*

## MARK.

- 29 the damsel gave it to her mother. And his disciples hearing of it came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.
- 30 And the apostles gathered together unto Jesus, and reported to him all things, both what they had
- 31 done, and what they had taught. And he said to them : Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest awhile ; for there were many coming and
- 32 going, and they had no leisure even to eat. And they departed into a desert place by ship privately.
- 33 And they saw them departing, and many knew them, and ran together there on foot from all the cities,
- 34 and came before them. And going forth he saw a great multitude, and had compassion on them, because they were as sheep having no shepherd ; and he began to teach them many things.
- 35 And the day being now far spent, his disciples came to him, and said : This is a desert place, and the
- 36 time is now far passed. Dismiss them, that they may go away into the surrounding fields and villages,
- 37 and buy themselves bread ; for they have nothing to eat. He answering said to them, Give ye them to eat. And they say to him : Shall we go and buy two
- 38 hundred denáries worth of bread, and give them to eat? He says to them, How many loaves have ye? Go and see. And when they knew, they say : Five,
- 39 and two fishes. And he commanded them to make all
- 40 lie down by companies on the green grass. And they lay down in ranks, by hundreds, and, by fifties.

## CHAPTER VI.

And taking the five loaves and the two fishes, he 41  
looked up to heaven, and blessed and brake the  
loaves, and gave to the disciples to set before  
them; and the two fishes divided he among them  
all. And they all ate, and were filled. And they 42  
took up fragments filling twelve baskets, and part 43  
of the fishes. And they that ate of the loaves were 44  
five thousand men. And straightway he constrained 45  
his disciples to enter into the ship, and to go before  
to the other side to Bethsaida, while he dismissed the  
multitude. And having parted from them, he went 46  
away into the mountain to pray.

And when evening was come, the ship was in the 47  
midst of the sea, and he was alone on the land.  
And he saw them distressed in rowing, for the wind 48  
was contrary to them. And about the fourth watch  
of the night he comes to them, walking on the sea,  
and would have passed by them. And they seeing 49  
him walking on the sea, supposed it was a spectre,  
and cried out. For all saw him, and were troubled. 50  
And immediately he talked with them, and says to  
them: Be of good cheer; it is I, be not afraid.  
And he went up to them into the ship; and the 51  
wind ceased. And they were sore amazed in them-  
selves beyond measure, and wondered. For they 52  
considered not the loaves; for their heart was hard-  
ened.

And passing over, they came to the land of 53  
Gennesaret, and anchored there. And when they 54



MARK.

had come out of the ship, immediately recognizing  
55 him, they ran through all that region, and began  
to carry about on beds those that were sick, where  
56 they heard he was. And wherever he entered, into  
villages, or cities, or fields, they laid the sick in  
the market-places, and besought him that they might  
touch even the fringe of his garment. And as many  
as touched him were made whole.

1 VII. AND there come together to him the  
Pharisees and certain of the scribes, who came  
2 from Jerusalem. And when they saw some of his  
disciples eating bread with defiled (that is, unwashen)  
3 hands, they found fault. For the Pharisees, and  
all the Jews, except they carefully wash their hands  
4 do not eat, holding the tradition of the elders. And  
coming from the market, except they immerse  
themselves they do not eat. And there are many  
other things which they have received to hold, im-  
mersions of cups and pots, and brazen vessels, and  
5 couches. Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him:  
Why do not thy disciples walk according to the  
tradition of the elders, but eat bread with defiled  
6 hands? And he said to them: Well did Isaiah  
prophecy concerning you hypocrites; as it is  
written, This people honor me with their lips, but  
7 their heart is far from me. But in vain they wor-  
ship me, teaching as doctrines commandments of  
8 men. For laying aside the commandment of God,

## CHAPTER VII.

ye hold the tradition of men, immersions of pots and cups; and many other such things ye do. And 9 he said to them: Well do ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition! For 10 Moses said: Honor thy father and thy mother; and he that curses father or mother, let him surely die. But ye say: If a man say to his father or his 11 mother, It is Corban (that is, a gift) whatsoever thou mightest be profited with from me, [he shall be free.] And ye suffer him no more to do aught for 12 his father or his mother, annulling the word of God 13 by your tradition, which ye have handed down. And many such things ye do.

And again calling to him the multitude, he said 14 to them: Hearken to me every one, and understand. There is nothing from without a man, that entering 15 into him can defile him; but the things that come out of him, these are they that defile the man. If 16 any one hath ears to hear, let him hear.

And when he had entered into the house from the 17 multitude, his disciples asked him concerning the parable. And he says to them: Are ye so without 18 understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatever from without enters into the man can not defile him? Because it enters not into his heart, 19 but into the belly, and goes out into the drain, cleansing all food. And he said: That which comes 20

---

V. 11. *or*, [he is bound]

MARK.

21 out of the man, that defiles the man. For from  
within, out of the heart of men, come forth evil  
22 thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts,  
covetousness, wickedness, deceit, wantonness, an evil  
23 eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness. All these evil  
things come forth from within, and defile the man.

24 And he arose, and departed thence into the bor-  
ders of Tyre and Sidon ; and entering into a house,  
he would have no one know it. And he could not be  
25 hid. For a woman, whose little daughter had an  
unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at  
26 his feet. The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician  
by nation ; and she besought him that he would cast  
27 out the devil from her daughter. And he said to  
her : Let the children first be filled ; for it is not good  
to take the children's bread and cast it to the dogs.  
28 And she answered and said to him : Yea, Lord ; for  
the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs.  
29 And he said to her : For this saying go thy way ;  
30 the devil has gone out of thy daughter. And de-  
parting to her house, she found the little child laid  
on the bed, and the devil gone out.

31 And again going forth out of the borders of Tyre,  
he came through Sidon to the sea of Galilee, through  
32 the midst of the borders of Decapolis. And they  
bring to him one that was deaf, and had an impedi-  
ment in his speech ; and they beseech him to put

---

V. 25. *In some ancient copies :* but immediately, a woman

V. 28. *or,* yet the dogs.

## CHAPTER VIII.

his hand upon him. And he took him aside from 33  
the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and  
he spit, and touched his tongue; and looking up 34  
to heaven, he sighed, and says to him, Ephphatha,  
that is, Be opened. And straightway his ears 35  
were opened, and the bond of his tongue was loosed,  
and he spake plainly. And he charged them that 36  
they should tell no one. But the more he charged  
them, the more abundantly they published it; and 37  
were beyond measure astonished, saying: He has  
done all things well; he makes both the deaf to hear,  
and the dumb to speak.

VIII. IN those days, there being a very great 1  
multitude, and they having nothing to eat, he called  
to him his disciples, and says to them: I have compas- 2  
sion on the multitude, because they continue with  
me now three days, and have nothing to eat; and 3  
if I dismiss them fasting to their own houses,  
they will faint by the way; and some of them have  
come from afar. And his disciples answered him: 4  
From whence will one be able to satisfy these men  
with bread, here in a wilderness? And he asked 5  
them, How many loaves have ye? And they said,  
Seven. And he commanded the multitude to lie 6  
down on the ground. And he took the seven  
loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his  
disciples to set before them; and they set them be-  
fore the multitude. And they had a few small fishes. 7

## MARK.

And having blessed them, he commanded to set these  
8 also before them. So they ate, and were filled ; and  
they took up of the fragments that were left seven  
9 baskets. And they were about four thousand.  
And he dismissed them.

- 10 And straightway he entered into the ship with  
his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.  
11 And the Pharisees came forth, and began to ques-  
tion with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven,  
12 tempting him. And he sighed deeply in his spirit,  
and says : Why does this generation seek a sign ?  
Verily I say to you, there shall no sign be given to  
13 this generation. And leaving them, he entered  
again into the ship, and departed to the other side.  
14 And they forgot to take bread ; and they had  
15 none in the ship with them, except one loaf. And  
he charged them, saying : Take heed, beware of the  
leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod.  
16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, it is  
17 because we have no bread. And Jesus knowing it,  
says to them : Why reason ye because ye have no  
bread ? Do ye not yet perceive, nor understand ?  
18 Have ye your heart yet hardened ? Having eyes,  
do ye not see ? And having ears, do ye not hear ?  
19 And do ye not remember ? When I brake the five  
loaves among the five thousand, how many baskets  
full of fragments did ye take up ? They say to him,  
20 Twelve. And when the seven among the four thou-  
sand, how many baskets full of fragments did ye

## CHAPTER VIII.

take up? And they said, Seven. And he said to 21  
them, How is it that ye do not understand?

And they come to Bethsaida. And they bring 22  
to him a blind man, and beseech him to touch him.  
And taking the blind man by the hand, he led him 23  
forth out of the village; and spitting in his eyes,  
and putting his hands on him, he asked him if he be-  
held anything. And looking up he said: I behold 24  
men; for I see them as trees walking. Then again 25  
he put his hands on his eyes, and he saw clearly; and  
he was restored, and saw all things distinctly. And 26  
he sent him away to his house, saying: Go not even  
into the village, nor tell it to any in the village.

And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the 27  
villages of Cesarea Philippi. And in the way he  
asked his disciples, saying to them: Who do men say  
that I am? And they answered him saying: John 28  
the Immerser; and others, Elijah; and others, one of  
the prophets. And he asked them, But who do ye 29  
say that I am? And Peter answering says to him,  
Thou art the Christ. And he charged them that 30  
they should tell no one concerning him.

And he began to teach them, that the Son of man 31  
must suffer many things, and be rejected by the  
elders, and the chief priests, and the scribes, and be  
killed, and after three days rise again. And he 32  
spake that saying openly. And Peter, taking him  
aside, began to rebuke him. But he, turning about 33  
and seeing his disciples, rebuked Peter, saying: Get

## MARK.

thee behind me, Satan ; for thou thinkest not the things of God but of men.

- 34 And calling to him the multitude, with his disciples, he said to them : Whoever will follow after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whoever will save his life shall lose it ; but whoever shall lose his life, for the sake of me and of the glad tidings, shall save it. For what will it profit a man, to gain the whole world, and  
37 forfeit his soul ? Or what shall a man give as an exchange for his soul ? For whoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him shall also the Son of man be ashamed, when he comes in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.

- 1 IX. AND he said to them : Verily I say to you, that there are some of those standing here, who shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.
- 2 And after six days Jesus takes with him Peter, and James, and John, and brings them up into a high mountain apart by themselves. And he was  
3 transfigured before them : And his garments became shining, exceeding white as snow, such as no fuller  
4 on earth can whiten. And there appeared to them Elijah with Moses ; and they were talking with  
5 Jesus. And Peter answering said to Jesus : Master, it is good for us to be here ; and let us make three

## CHAPTER IX.

tents, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for  
Elijah. For he knew not what to say; for they 6  
were sore afraid. And there came a cloud over- 7  
shadowing them; and a voice came out of the cloud :  
This is my beloved Son; hear ye him. And sud- 8  
denly, looking around, they no longer saw any one,  
but Jesus only with themselves.

And as they came down from the mountain, he 9  
charged them that they should relate what they had  
seen to no one, except when the Son of man shall  
have risen from the dead. And they kept that 10  
saying with themselves, questioning together, what  
is the rising from the dead.

And they asked him, saying : Why say the scribes 11  
that Elijah must first come? And he said to them : 12  
Elijah indeed comes first, and restores all things.  
And how is it written of the Son of man? That he  
must suffer many things, and be set at nought. But 13  
I say to you, that Elijah also has come, and they did  
to him whatever they would, as it is written of him.

And coming to his disciples he saw a great mul- 14  
titude about them, and scribes questioning with them.  
And straightway all the multitude seeing him were 15  
greatly amazed, and running to him saluted him.  
And he asked them, What question ye with them? 16  
And one of the multitude answered him : Teacher, I 17  
brought to thee my son, having a dumb spirit. And 18  
wherever it lays hold of him, it tears him, and he  
foams, and gnashes his teeth; and he pines away.



## MARK.

- And I spake to thy disciples that they should cast  
19 it out ; and they could not. He answering, says to  
them : O faithless generation, how long shall I be  
with you ? How long shall I bear with you ? Bring  
20 him to me. And they brought him to him. And  
seeing him, straightway the spirit rent him ; and he  
21 fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming. And he  
asked his father, How long is it, since this came  
22 upon him ? And he said, From a child. And oft-  
times it has cast him into the fire, and into the water,  
to destroy him. But if thou art able to do anything,  
23 have compassion on us, and help us. Jesus said to  
him : If thou art able ! All things are possible to the  
24 believing. And straightway the father of the child  
cried out, and said : I believe ; help thou mine unbelief.  
25 And Jesus, seeing that a multitude came running to-  
gether, rebuked the unclean spirit, saying to him :  
Dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of  
26 him, and enter into him no more. And crying out,  
and rending him sorely, it came out of him. And he  
became as one dead ; so that many said, he is dead.  
27 But Jesus took hold of his hand, and raised him, and  
he stood up.  
28. And when he had come into the house, his disci-  
ples asked him privately, Why could not we cast it  
29 out ? And he said to them : This kind can go out  
by nothing, except by prayer and fasting.  
30 And they departed thence, and passed through  
Galilee ; and he would not that any one should

## CHAPTER IX.

know it. For he taught his disciples, and said to 31  
them : The Son of man is delivered into the hands  
of men, and they will kill him ; and after he is killed,  
he will rise again on the third day. But they under- 32  
stood not the saying, and were afraid to ask him.

And they came to Capernaum. And having come 33  
into the house he asked them : Of what were ye rea-  
soning among yourselves by the way ? But they 34  
were silent ; for by the way they had disputed with one  
another, who was greatest. And sitting down, he 35  
called the twelve, and says to them : If any one de-  
sires to be first, he shall be last of all, and servant  
of all. And taking a child, he set it in the midst of 36  
them ; and folding it in his arms, he said to them :  
Whoever shall receive one of such children in my 37  
name, receives me ; and whoever shall receive me,  
receives not me, but him that sent me.

And John answered him, saying : Teacher, we saw 38  
one casting out devils in thy name, who follows not  
us ; and we forbade him, because he follows not us.  
But Jesus said : Forbid him not ; for there is no one 39  
who shall do a miracle in my name, and can lightly  
speak evil of me. For he that is not against us is 40  
for us. For whoever shall give you a cup of water 41  
to drink in that name, that ye are Christ's, verily I  
say to you, he shall not lose his reward. And who- 42  
ever shall cause one of these little ones that believe  
in me to offend, it is better for him that an upper  
millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were

MARK.

43 cast into the sea. And if thy hand cause thee to  
offend, cut it off. It is better for thee to enter into  
life maimed, than having the two hands to go into  
44 hell, into the fire that is unquenchable ; where their  
45 worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched. And  
if thy foot cause thee to offend, cut it off. It is bet-  
ter for thee to enter into life lame, than having the  
two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that is un-  
46 quenchable ; where their worm dies not, and the  
47 fire is not quenched. And if thine eye cause thee to  
offend, pluck it out. It is better for thee to enter  
into the kingdom of Góð with one eye, than having  
48 two eyes to be cast into hell-fire ; where their worm  
48 dies not, and the fire is not quenched. For every  
one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall  
50 be salted with salt. Salt is good ; but if the salt  
lose its saltness, wherewith will ye season it ? Have  
salt in yourselves, and be at peace with one another.

1 X. AND he rises and goes thence into the bord-  
ers of Judea, and the farther side of the Jordan. And  
again the multitudes comẽ together to him ; and as  
he was wont, he again taught them.

2 And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him,  
if it is lawful for a man to put away a wife, tempt-  
3 ing him. And he answering said to them : What  
4 did Moses command you ? And they said, Moses  
permitted to write a bill of divorcement, and to put  
5 her away. And Jesus answering said to them, For

## CHAPTER X.

your hardness of heart he wrote you this command. But from the beginning of the creation, God made 6  
them male and female. For this cause shall a man 7  
leave his father and mother, and shall cleave to his  
wife; and the two shall be one flesh. So that they 8  
are no longer two, but one flesh. What therefore 9  
God has joined together, let not man put asunder.

And in the house his disciples asked him again 10  
concerning this. And he says to them: Whoever 11  
shall put away his wife, and marry another, commits  
adultery against her. And if a woman shall put 12  
away her husband, and be married to another, she  
commits adultery.

And they brought little children to him, that he 13  
might touch them; and the disciples rebuked those  
that brought them. But Jesus seeing it, was much 14  
displeased, and said to them: Suffer the little child-  
ren to come to me; forbid them not, for to such be-  
longs the kingdom of God. Verily I say to you, 15  
whoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a  
little child, he shall not enter therein. And he folded 16  
them in his arms, put his hands on them, and blessed  
them.

And as he went forth into the way, there came 17  
one running, and kneeling to him, and asked him:  
Good Teacher, what shall I do that I may inherit  
eternal life. And Jesus said to him: Why callest 18  
thou me good? There is none good but one, God.  
Thou knowest the commandments: Do not commit 19

MARK.

- adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honor thy father and mother.
- 20 And he answering said to him : Teacher, all these  
21 have I kept from my youth. And Jesus beholding  
him loved him, and said to him : One thing thou  
lackest ; go, sell whatever thou hast, and give to the  
poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven ; and  
22 come, take up the cross, and follow me. And he be-  
came sad at that saying, and went away sorrowful ;  
for he had great possessions.
- 23 And looking around Jesus says to his disciples :  
How hardly shall they that have riches enter into  
24 the kingdom of God ! And the disciples were as-  
tonished at his words. But Jesus answering again  
says to them : Children, how hard is it for them  
that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of  
25 God ! It is easier for a camel to go through the  
eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the  
26 kingdom of God. And they were exceedingly  
amazed, saying among themselves, Who then can  
27 be saved ? And Jesus looking on them says : With  
men it is impossible, but not with God ; for with  
God all things are possible.
- 28 Peter began to say to him : Lo, we have left all,  
29 and followed thee. And Jesus answering said :  
Verily I say to you, there is no one that has left  
house, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother,  
or wife, or children, or lands, for the sake of me and  
30 of the glad tidings, but he shall receive a hundred-

## CHAPTER X.

fold now in this time, houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions, and in the world to come eternal life. But many first shall be last, and the last first. 31

And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem. 32 And Jesus was going before them ; and they were amazed, and as they followed they were afraid. And again he took with him the twelve, and began to say to them what things should happen to him : 33 Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem ; and the Son of man shall be delivered to the chief priests, and to the scribes ; and they will condemn him to death, and deliver him to the Gentiles ; and they will 34 mock him, and scourge him, and spit upon him, and will kill him ; and on the third day he will rise again.

And James and John, the sons of Zebedee, come 35 to him saying : Teacher, we desire that thou shouldst do for us whatever we shall ask. And he said 36 to them, What do ye desire that I should do for you ? They said to him, Grant to us that we may 37 sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy glory. And Jesus said to them : Ye know 38 not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink the cup that I drink, or to endure the immersion which I endure ? And they said to him, We are able. 39 And Jesus said to them : Ye shall indeed drink the cup that I drink, and endure the immersion which I endure. But to sit on my right hand, or on the left, 40

## MARK.

is not mine to give, but is for them for whom it has been prepared.

41 And the ten, hearing it, began to be much dis-  
42 pleased with James and John. And Jesus, calling  
them to him, says to them : Ye know that they  
who are accounted to rule over the Gentiles exer-  
cise lordship over them ; and their great ones exer-  
43 cise authority over them. But it is not so among  
you. But whoever would become great among you,  
44 shall be your minister ; and whoever would become  
45 chiefest of you, shall be servant of all. For even  
the Son of man came not to be ministered to, but to  
minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

46 And they come to Jericho. And as he was going  
forth from Jericho with his disciples and a great  
multitude, the son of Timæus, Bartimæus a blind  
47 beggar, was sitting by the wayside. And hearing  
that it is Jesus the Nazarene, he began to cry out,  
and say : Son of David, Jesus, have mercy on me.  
48 And many rebuked him, that he should hold his  
peace. But he cried all the more : Son of David,  
49 have mercy on me. And Jesus stood still, and said,  
Call him. And they call the blind man, saying to  
50 to him : Be of good cheer ; rise, he calls thee. And  
he, casting away his garment, leaped up, and came  
51 to Jesus. And Jesus answering said to him, What  
wilt thou that I should do to thee ? The blind man  
52 said to him, Lord, that I may receive sight. And

---

V. 42. *Or,* they who claim to rule

## CHAPTER XI.

Jesus said to him: Go thy way; thy faith has made thee whole. And immediately he received sight, and followed him in the way.

XI. AND when they come near to Jerusalem, to 1  
Bethphage and Bethany at the mount of the Olives,  
he sends forth two of his disciples, and says to them: 2  
Go into the village over against you; and immediately,  
on entering into it, ye shall find a colt tied,  
whereon no man has sat; loose, and bring him.  
And if any one say to you, Why do ye this? say, 3  
The Lord hath need of him; and straightway he  
will send him hither. And they departed, and found 4  
a colt tied by the door without, on the street; and  
they loose him. And some of those standing there, 5  
said to them, What do ye, loosing the colt? And 6  
they said to them as Jesus commanded; and  
they let them go. And they bring the colt to 7  
Jesus, and cast their garments on him; and he sat  
upon him. And many spread their garments in the 8  
way, and others cut down branches off the trees, and  
strewed them in the way. And they that went 9  
before, and they that followed, cried: Hosanna!  
blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord;  
blessed is the coming kingdom of our father David; 10  
Hosanna in the highest! And he entered into Jeru- 11  
salem, and into the temple; and having looked

---

V. 8. *In the oldest copies*: and others branches, cutting them from the fields.



## MARK.

around on all things, the evening being now come, he went out to Bethany with the twelve.

- 12 And on the morrow, when they had come out from  
13 Bethany, he was hungry. And seeing a fig tree  
afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might  
find anything thereon. And when he came to it, he  
found nothing but leaves ; for it was not the season  
14 of figs. And he answered and said to it, Let no one  
eat fruit of thee, henceforth forever. And his dis-  
ciples heard it.
- 15 And they come to Jerusalem. And entering  
into the temple, he began to cast out them that  
sold and bought in the temple, and overturned the  
tables of the money changers, and the seats of them  
16 that sold doves ; and suffered not that any one  
17 should carry a vessel through the temple. And he  
taught, saying to them : Is it not written, My house  
shall be called a house of prayer for all the nations ?  
18 But ye have made it a den of robbers. And the chief  
priests and the scribes heard it. And they sought  
how they might destroy him ; for they feared him,  
for all the multitude was astonished at his teaching.
- 19 And when it became late, he went forth out of the  
city.
- 20 And passing by in the morning, they saw the fig  
21 tree dried up from the roots. And Peter calling to  
remembrance says to him : Master, behold, the fig  
22 tree which thou didst curse is withered away. And  
Jesus answering says to them, Have faith in God.

## CHAPTER XI.

Verily I say to you, that whoever shall say to this 23  
mountain : Be thou taken up and cast into the sea ;  
and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe  
that what he says comes to pass, he shall have  
it. Therefore I say to you : All things whatever ye 24  
ask, when ye pray, believe that ye received, and ye  
shall have them.

And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have 25  
aught against any one ; that your Father also who  
is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. But 26  
if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father who is  
is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

And they come again into Jerusalem. And as he 27  
was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief  
priests, and the scribes, and the elders. And they said 28  
to him : By what authority doest thou these things ?  
And who gave thee this authority, to do these things ?  
And Jesus answering said to them : I also will ask 29  
you one thing ; and answer me, and I will tell you  
by what authority I do these things. John's im- 30  
mersion, was it from heaven, or from men ? Answer  
me. And they reasoned among themselves, saying : 31  
If we say, From heaven ; he will say, Why then did  
ye not believe him ? But shall we say from men ? 32  
They feared the people ; for all held that John was  
verily a prophet. And answering they say to 33

---

V. 26 is omitted in some ancient copies.

## MARK.

Jesus, We do not know. And Jesus says to them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

1 XII. AND he began to speak to them in parables. A man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and dug a wine vat, and built a tower, and  
2 let it out to husbandmen, and went abroad. And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the  
3 fruits of the vineyard. And they took him and  
4 beat him, and sent him away empty. And again he sent to them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him  
5 away shamefully treated. And he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating  
6 some, and killing some. Having yet therefore one beloved son, he sent him also to them last, saying: They  
7 will reverence my son. But those husbandmen said among themselves: This is the heir; come, let us  
8 kill him, and the inheritance will be ours. And they took, and killed him, and cast him out of the  
9 vineyard. What therefore will the lord of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard to others.  
10 And have ye not read this scripture: The stone which the builders disallowed, the same is become  
11 the head of the corner; this is from the Lord, and  
12 is wonderful in our eyes? And they sought to lay

## CHAPTER XII.

hold of him, but feared the people ; for they knew that he spake the parable against them ; and they left him, and went away.

And they send to him some of the Pharisees and 13 of the Herodians, to entrap him with a word. And 14 they come and say to him : Teacher, we know that thou art true, and carest for no one ; for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth. Is it lawful to give tribute to Cæsar, or not? Shall we give, or shall we not 15 give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said to them : Why tempt ye me? Bring me a denáry, that I may see it. And they brought it. And he says 16 to them, Whose is this image, and the inscription? And they said to him, Cæsar's. And Jesus answer- 17 ing said to them : Render to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and to God the things that are God's. And they marvelled at him.

And there come to him Sadducees, who say there 18 is no resurrection. And they asked him, saying : Teacher, Moses wrote to us, that if one's brother 19 die, and leave a wife behind, and leave no children, that his brother should take the wife, and raise up seed to his brother. There were seven brothers ; 20 and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed. And the second took her, and died, and he also left 21 no seed ; and the third likewise. And the seven 22 took her, and left no seed. Last of all the woman died also. In the resurrection therefore, when they 23

MARK.

- shall rise again, of which of them shall she be wife?  
24 For the seven had her for a wife. Jesus answering  
said to them : Do ye not therefore err, because ye  
know not the Scriptures, nor the power of God?  
25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither  
marry, nor are given in marriage ; but are as an-  
26 gels who are in heaven. And concerning the dead,  
that they rise, have ye not read in the book of  
Moses, at The Bush, how God spake to him, saying :  
I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac,  
27 and the God of Jacob ? He is not God of the dead,  
but of the living. Ye greatly err.  
28 And one of the scribes came to him, and having  
heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that  
he answered them well, asked him : Which com-  
29 mandment is first of all ? And Jesus answered  
him, First is : Hear, O Israel ; the Lord is our God,  
30 the Lord is one ; and thou shalt love the Lord thy  
God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and  
with all thy mind, and with all thy strength. This  
31 is the first commandment. Second is this : Thou  
shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. There is no  
32 other commandment greater than these. And the  
scribe said to him : Well, Teacher ; thou saidest  
truly that he is one, and there is no other beside  
33 him ; and to love him with all the heart, and with  
all the understanding, and with all the soul, and  
with all the strength, and to love his neighbor as  
himself, is more than all the whole-burnt-offerings

## CHAPTER XII.

and sacrifices. And Jesus seeing that he answered 34 discreetly, said to him : Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no one dared any longer to question him.

And Jesus answering said, while teaching in the 35 temple : How say the scribes that the Christ is son of David ? For David himself said in the Holy 36 Spirit : The LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I put thine enemies under thy feet. David himself calls him Lord ; and whence is he his 37 son ? And the great multitude heard him gladly.

And he said to them in his teaching : Beware of 38 the scribes, who love to go about in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the first seats in 39 the synagogues, and the first places at the feasts ; who devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make 40 long prayers ; these shall receive greater condemnation.

And sitting over against the treasury, he beheld 41 how the people cast money into the treasury ; and many that were rich cast in much. And one poor 42 widow came, and cast in two mites, which are a farthing. And calling to him his disciples, he said 43 to them : Verily I say to you, that this poor widow has cast in more than all who are casting into the treasury. For all have cast in out of their abund- 44 ance ; but she, out of her want, has cast in all that she had, her whole living.

MARK.

- 1 XIII. AND as he went out of the temple, one of  
his disciples says to him : Teacher, see what manner  
2 of stones, and what manner of buildings ! And Je-  
sus said to him : Seest thou these great buildings ?  
There shall not be left one stone upon another, that  
shall not be thrown down.
- 3 And as he was sitting on the mount of the Olives,  
over against the temple, Peter and James and John  
4 and Andrew asked him privately : Tell us, when shall  
these things be ? And what is the sign when all  
these things are about to be accomplished.
- 5 And Jesus began to say to them : Take heed lest  
6 any one lead you astray. For many shall come in  
my name, saying, I am he, and shall lead many astray.  
7 And when ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars,  
be not troubled, for it must come to pass ; but not  
8 yet is the end. For nation shall rise against nation,  
and kingdom against kingdom ; and there shall be  
earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be fam-  
ines and commotions ; these are the beginning of  
sorrows.
- 9 But do ye take heed to yourselves ; for they shall  
deliver you up to councils, and in the synagogues  
ye shall be beaten ; and ye shall be brought before  
governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony to  
10 them. And the good news must first be preached  
among all the nations.
- 11 But when they lead you away to deliver you up,  
take not thought beforehand what ye shall speak,

### CHAPTER XIII.

nor premeditate ; but whatever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ; for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Spirit. And the brother shall 12 deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child ; and children shall rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death. And ye shall 13 be hated by all for my name's sake ; but he that has endured unto the end, the same shall be saved.

But when ye see the abomination of desolation 14 standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth mark !) then let those in Judea flee to the mountains. And he that is upon the house, let him not go down 15 into the house, nor enter in to take anything out of his house. And he that is in the field, let him not 16 turn back to take his garment.

But woe to them that are with child, and to them 17 that give suck in those days ! And pray that it be 18 not in the winter. For in those days shall be affliction, such as has not been from the beginning of the creation which God created until now, neither shall be. And if the Lord had not shortened those days, 20 no flesh would have been saved ; but for the sake of the chosen, whom he chose, he shortened the days.

And then if any one say to you, Lo, here is 21 the Christ, or Lo, there, believe not. For false 22 Christs and false prophets shall arise, and shall shew signs and wonders, so as to lead, if possible, even the chosen astray. But do ye take heed ; I have 23 foretold you all.



MARK.

24 . But in those days, after that affliction, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her  
25 light ; and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the  
26 powers that are in heaven shall be shaken. And then shall they see the Son of man coming in clouds, with  
27 great power and glory. And then shall he send forth the angels, and gather together his chosen from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

28 And learn the parable from the fig tree. When its branch is already become tender, and puts forth  
29 leaves, ye know that summer is near. So also ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know that it  
30 is near, at the doors. Verily I say to you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these things are  
31 done. Heaven and earth shall pass away ; but my words shall not pass away.

32 . But of that day or hour no one knows, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but the Father.  
33 Take heed, watch ; for ye know not when the time  
34 is. As a man who is abroad, having left his house, and given authority to his servants, to each one his work, also commanded the porter that he should  
35 watch ; watch therefore, for ye know not when the master of the house comes, at evening, or at midnight, or at the cockcrowing, or in the morning ;  
36 lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping. And  
37 what I say to you I say to all, Watch.

## CHAPTER XIV.

XIV. AFTER two days was the passover, and 1  
the feast of unleavened bread ; and the chief priests  
and the scribes sought how they might take him by  
craft, and put him to death. For they said : Not at 2  
the feast, lest there shall be a tumult of the people.

And he being in Bethany, in the house of Simon 3  
the leper, as he was reclining at table, there came a  
woman having an alabaster box of ointment of pure  
spikenard, very precious ; and she brake the box,  
and poured it on his head. And there were some 4  
that were displeased among themselves, and said,  
Why was this waste of the ointment made ? For 5  
this ointment could have been sold for more than  
three hundred denáries, and given to the poor. And  
they murmured at her. And Jesus said : Let her 6  
alone ; why do ye trouble her ? She has wrought a  
good work on me. For the poor ye have always 7  
with you, and when ye will ye can do good to them ;  
but me ye have not always. She has done what 8  
she could ; she has beforehand anointed my body  
for the preparation for burial. Verily I say to you, 9  
wherever the good news\* shall be preached in the  
whole world, this also that she has done shall be  
told for a memorial of her.

And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went to 10  
the chief priests, to deliver him up to them. And 11  
when they heard it they were glad, and promised to  
give him money. And he sought how he might  
conveniently deliver him up.

MARK.

- 12 And on the first day of the feast of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples say to him : Where wilt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eat the passover? And he sends forth two of his disciples, and says to them : Go into the city, and there will meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water ; follow him. And where he shall go in, say to the master of the house : The Teacher says, Where is the guestchamber, in which I may eat the passover with my disciples ? And he will shew you a large upper room furnished, ready ; there prepare for us. And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he said to them ; and they made ready the passover.
- 17 And at evening he comes with the twelve. And as they were reclining at table, and eating, Jesus said : Verily I say to you, that one of you will betray me, one that eateth with me ! And they began to be sorrowful, and to say to him one by one, Is it I ? And another said, Is it I ? And he answered and said to them : It is one of the twelve, one that dips with me into the dish. The Son of man indeed goes, as it is written of him ; but woe to that man through whom the Son of man is betrayed ! It were good for him if that man had not been born.
- 22 And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake, and gave to them, and said : Take ye ; this is my body. And he took the cup,

#### CHAPTER XIV.

and gave thanks, and gave it to them ; and they all drank of it. And he said to them : This is my blood of the covenant, which is shed for many. Verily I say to you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

And having sung, they went out into the mount of the Olives. And Jesus says to them : All ye will be offended ; because it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered. But after I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

And Peter said to him : Though all shall be offended, yet will not I. And Jesus says to him : Verily I say to thee, that thou this day, in this night, before the cock crow twice, wilt thrice deny me. But he said the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee. Likewise also said they all.

And they come to a place which was named Gethsemane. And he says to his disciples : Sit ye here, while I shall pray. And he takes with him Peter and James and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be troubled. And he says to them : My soul is exceedingly sorrowful unto death ; tarry here, and watch. And going forward a little, he fell on the ground, and prayed that, if it were possible, the hour might pass from him. And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible to thee ; take

MARK.

away this cup from me ; but not what I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And he comes, and finds them sleeping. And he says to Peter : Simon, sleepest thou ? Couldst thou  
38 not watch one hour ? Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

39 And again he went away and prayed, saying the  
40 same words. And returning, he found them again sleeping, for their eyes were heavy ; and they knew not what to answer him.

41 And he comes the third time, and says to them : Sleep on now, and take your rest. It is enough, the hour is come ; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. Rise, let us go ;  
42 behold, he that betrays me is at hand.

43 And immediately, while he was yet speaking, comes Judas one of the twelve, and with him a multitude with swords and staves, from the chief  
44 priests and the scribes and the elders. Now his betrayer had given them a signal, saying : Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he ; lay hold of him, and lead him  
45 away securely. And coming, he goes straightway to him, and says : Master, Master ; and kissed him.

46 And they laid their hands on him, and held him  
47 fast. And one of those standing by drew his sword, and smote the servant of the high priest, and took

---

V. 41. *or*, Sleep ye the remaining time, and take your rest ?

#### CHAPTER XIV.

off his ear. And Jesus answering said to them : 48  
Have ye come out, as against a robber, with swords  
and staves to take me? I was daily with you in the 49  
temple teaching, and ye did not lay hold of me; but  
that the Scriptures might be fulfilled! And all for- 50  
sook him, and fled.

And there followed him a certain young man, 51  
having a linen cloth cast about his naked body; and  
the young men lay hold of him. And leaving be- 52  
hind the linen cloth, he fled from them naked.

And they led Jesus away to the high priest; and 53  
with him assembled all the chief priests and the  
elders and the scribes. And Peter followed him 54  
afar off, even into the court of the high priest, and  
was sitting with the officers, and warming himself  
at the fire.

And the chief priests and all the council sought 55  
for testimony against Jesus, in order to put him to  
death; and they found none. For many bare false 56  
witness against him; but their testimonies agreed not  
together. And certain ones rose up, and bare false 57  
witness against him, saying: We heard him say, I 58  
will destroy this temple that is made with hands,  
and in three days I will build another made without  
hands. And not even so did their testimony agree. 59

And the high priest stood up in the midst, and 60  
asked Jesus, saying: Answerest thou nothing?  
What do these witness against thee? But he was 61  
silent, and answered nothing. Again the high priest

MARK.

asked him, and said to him : Art thou the Christ, the  
62 Son of the Blessed? And Jesus said, I am ; and  
ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand  
of power, and coming with the clouds of heaven.

63 And the high priest, rending his clothes, says : What  
64 further need have we of witnesses? Ye heard the  
blasphemy. What think ye? And they all con-  
demned him to be guilty of death.

65 And some began to spit on him, and to cover his  
face and buffet him, and say to him, Prophecy.  
And the officers, with blows, took him charge.

66 And as Peter was below in the court, there comes  
67 one of the maid-servants of the high priest ; and  
seeing Peter warming himself, she looked upon him,  
and said : Thou also wast with Jesus the Nazarene.  
68 But he denied, saying : I know not, nor understand  
I at all, what thou sayest. And he went out into  
the fore-court ; and the cock crowed.

69 And the maid-servant, seeing him, began again to  
70 say to those standing by, This is one of them. And  
he denied it again.

And a little after, they that stood by said again  
to Peter : Surely thou art one of them ; for thou art  
71 a Galilean. But he began to invoke curses, and to  
swear, I know not this man of whom ye speak.  
72 And the cock crowed a second time. And Peter re-  
membered the word, how Jesus said to him : Before  
the cock crow twice, thou wilt thrice deny me. And  
as he thought thereon, he wept.

## CHAPTER XV.

XV. AND straightway, in the morning, the chief 1  
priests with the elders and scribes and the whole  
council, having held a consultation, bound Jesus and  
carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate. And 2  
Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Jews?  
And he answering said to him, Thou sayest it. And 3  
the chief priests accused him of many things.

And Pilate asked him again, saying : Answerest 4  
thou nothing? Behold what things they testify  
against thee. But Jesus no longer made any answer ; 5  
so that Pilate marvelled.

Now at the feast he released to them one prisoner, 6  
whomsoever they asked. And there was the one called 7  
Barabbas, bound with his companions in sedition,  
who in the sedition had committed murder. And 8  
coming up, the multitude began to make request,  
according as he had always done for them. And 9  
Pilate answered them, saying : Will ye that I re-  
lease to you the King of the Jews. For he knew 10  
that through envy the chief priests had delivered him  
up. But the chief priests stirred up the multitude, 11  
that he should rather release to them Barabbas. And 12  
Pilate answering, said again to them : What will ye  
then that I shall do to him whom ye call the King  
of the Jews? And they cried again, Crucify him. 13  
And Pilate said to them, What evil then has he 14  
done? And they cried the more exceedingly, Cru-  
cify him.

And Pilate, willing to satisfy the multitude, re- 15



## MARK.

- leased to them Barabbas ; and he delivered up Jesus,  
16 after scourging him, to be crucified. And the  
soldiers led him away into the court, which is Pre-  
torium ; and they call together the whole band.  
17 And they clothe him with purple, and having plat-  
18 ted a crown of thorns, they put it on him. And  
they began to salute him : Hail, King of the Jews !  
19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and  
spit upon him, and kneeling down, did homage to him.  
20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the  
purple from him, and put on him his own garments.  
21 And they lead him out to crucify him. And they  
compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who was passing by,  
coming from the country, the father of Alexander  
22 and Rufus, to bear his cross. And they bring him  
to the place Golgotha, which is interpreted, place  
23 of a skull. And they gave him wine mingled with  
24 myrrh ; but he took it not. And having crucified  
him, they dividé his garments, casting lots upon  
25 them, what any one should take. And it was  
26 the third hour ; and they crucified him. And the  
inscription of the accusation against him was writ-  
ten over : THE KING OF THE JEWS.  
27 And with him they crucify two robbers ; one on  
28 his right hand, and one on his left. And the scrip-  
ture was fulfilled, which says, And he was reckoned  
29 with transgressors. And they that passed by railed  
at him, wagging their heads, and saying : Aha, thou  
that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three

## CHAPTER XV.

days ; save thyself, and come down from the cross. 30  
Likewise, also the chief priests, mocking one with 31  
another, together with the scribes, said : He saved  
others, himself he can not save. Let the Christ, the 32  
King of Israel, come down now from the cross, that  
we may see and believe. And they that were cru-  
cified with him reproached him. •

And when the sixth hour was come, there was 33  
darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour.  
And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, 34  
saying : Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani ? Which is  
interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou for-  
saken me ? And some of them that stood by, hear- 35  
ing it, said : Behold, he calls Elijah. And one ran 36  
and filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it on a  
reed, and gave him to drink, saying : Let alone ; let  
us see whether Elijah will come to take him down.

And Jesus, uttering a loud cry, expired. And the 37  
vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top 38  
to the bottom. And the centurion who was stand- 39  
ing near, over against him, seeing that he so cried  
out and expired, said : Truly this man was the Son  
of God.

And there were also women looking on afar off ; 40  
among whom was also Mary the Magdalene, and  
Mary the mother of James the younger and of Joses,  
and Salome ; who also, when he was in Galilee, fol- 41  
lowed him, and ministered to him ; and many other  
women who came up with him to Jerusalem.

## MARK.

42 . And evening having now come, since it was the  
preparation (which is the day before the sabbath),  
43 Joseph from Arimathea, an honorable counselor,  
who also was himself waiting for the kingdom of  
God, came and went in boldly to Pilate, and asked  
44 for the body of Jesus. And Pilate marvelled, if he  
were already dead; and calling to him the centurion,  
45 he asked him if he had been long dead. And hav-  
ing learned it from the centurion, he gave the dead  
46 body to Joseph. And having bought fine linen, he  
took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and  
laid him in a sepulchre which was hewn out of a  
rock, and rolled a stone to the door of the sepulchre.  
47 And Mary the Magdalene, and Mary the mother of  
Joses beheld where he was laid.

1 XVI. AND the sabbath being past, Mary the  
Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and  
Salome, bought spices, that they might come and  
2 anoint him. And very early, on the first day of the  
week, they come to the sepulchre at the rising of  
3 the sun. And they said to one another, Who will  
roll away the stone for us from the door of the  
4 sepulchre? And looking up, they see that the  
stone has been rolled away. For it was very great.  
5 And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young  
man sitting on the right side, clothed in a white

---

V. 42. *Gr.* which is the ante-sabbath.

## CHAPTER XVI.

robe ; and they were affrighted. And he says to 6  
them, Be not affrighted. Ye are seeking Jesus  
the Nazarene, who was crucified. He is risen ; he  
is not here. Behold the place where they laid him.  
But go, say to his disciples, and to Peter, that he 7  
goes before you into Galilee. There shall ye see  
him, as he said to you. And they went out, and 8  
fled from the sepulchre ; for trembling and astonish-  
ment seized them. And they said nothing to any  
one ; for they were afraid.

And having risen early, on the first day of the 9  
week, he appeared first to Mary the Magdalene,  
from whom he had cast out seven devils. She went 10  
and reported it to them that had been with him, as  
they mourned and wept. And they, hearing that 11  
he was alive, and had been seen by her, believed not.

After that he appeared in another form to two of 12  
them, as they walked, going into the country. They 13  
also went and reported it to the rest ; nor did they  
believe them.

Afterward he appeared to the eleven themselves 14  
as they reclined at table, and upbraided their un-  
belief and hardness of heart, because they believed  
not them that had seen him after he was risen.  
And he said to them : Go into all the world, and 15  
preach the good news to every creature. He that 16  
believes and is immersed shall be saved ; but he that  
believes not shall be condemned. And these signs shall 17

MARK.

accompany them that believe ; in my name shall they cast out devils ; they shall speak with new  
18 tongues ; they shall take up serpents ; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them ; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

19 The Lord therefore, after he had spoken to them, was taken up into heaven ; and he sat down on the  
20 right hand of God. And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word by the signs that followed.

# THE GOSPEL

ACCORDING TO

## L U K E.

### CHAPTER I.

FORASMUCH as many have taken in hand to set  
forth in order a narration concerning the things  
fully believed among us, as they delivered them to  
us, who from the beginning were eyewitnesses and  
ministers of the word ; it seemed good to me also,  
having accurately traced all from the very first,  
to write to thee in order, most excellent Theophilus ;  
that thou mightest know thẽ certainty concerning  
those things wherein thou hast been instructed.

There was in the days of Herod, the king of Ju-  
dea, a certain priest named Zachariah, of the course  
of Abijah ; and his wife was of the daughters of  
Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth. And they  
were both righteous before God, walking in all the  
commandments and ordinances of the Lord blame-  
less. And they had no child, because Elisabeth was

---

V. 1. *or*, the things accomplished among us.

V. 4. *or*, those words

## LUKE.

barren ; and they both were now far advanced in years.

- 8 And it came to pass that while he executed the  
9 priest's office before God, in the order of his course, it  
fell to his lot, according to the custom of the priest's  
office, to burn incense, going into the temple of the  
10 Lord. And the whole multitude of the people were  
11 praying without at the hour of incense. And there ap-  
peared to him an angel of the Lord, standing on the  
12 right side of the altar of incense. And Zachariah  
seeing him was troubled, and fear fell upon him.  
13 But the angel said to him : Fear not, Zachariah ;  
for thy prayer was heard, and thy wife Elisabeth  
shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name  
14 John. And thou shalt have joy and gladness ; and  
15 many shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be  
great before the Lord ; and he shall not drink wine  
nor strong drink ; and he shall be filled with the  
16 Holy Spirit, even from his mother's womb. And  
many of the sons of Israel shall he turn to the Lord  
17 their God. And he shall go before him in the spirit  
and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers  
to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom  
of the just ; to make ready a prepared people for  
the Lord.
- 18 And Zachariah said to the angel : Whereby shall  
I know this ? For I am an old man, and my wife is  
19 far advanced in years. And the angel answering said  
to him : I am Gabriel, that stands in the presence

## CHAPTER I.

of God ; and I was sent to speak to thee, and to bring thee these glad tidings. And, behold, thou 20 shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou didst not believe my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

And the people were waiting for Zachariah, 21 and wondered at his long tarrying in the temple. And when he came out he could not speak to them ; 22 and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple ; and he beckoned to them, and remained speechless.

And it came to pass, when the days of his minis- 23 tration were completed, that he departed to his own house.

And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceiv- 24 ed ; and she hid herself five months, saying : thus- 25 hath the Lord dealt with me, in the days wherein he looked on me to take away my reproach among men.

And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was 26 sent from God to a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, to a virgin betrothed to a man whose name was 27 Joseph, of the house of David ; and the virgin's name was Mary. And the angel having come to 28 her, said : Hail, highly favored ! The Lord is with thee. Blessed art thou among women. And she 29 was troubled at the saying ; and was considering what manner of salutation this might be. And 30



LUKE.

the angel said to her : Fear not, Mary ; for thou  
31 hast found favor with God. And, behold, thou  
shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son,  
32 and shalt call his name Jesus. He shall be great,  
and shall be called Son of the Highest ; and the  
Lord God will give to him the throne of David his  
33 father ; and he shall reign over the house of Jacob  
forever ; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

34 Then said Mary to the angel : How shall this be,  
35 seeing that I know not a man ? And the angel answer-  
ing said to her : The Holy Spirit shall come upon  
thee, and the power of the Highest shall over-  
shadow thee ; therefore also the Holy One that is  
36 born shall be called the Son of God. And, behold,  
Elisabeth thy kinswoman, she also has conceived a  
son in her old age ; and this is the sixth month with  
37 her who is called barren. For with God nothing  
shall be impossible.

38 And Mary said : Behold the handmaid of the  
Lord ; let it be to me according to thy word.  
And the angel departed from her.

39 And Mary arose in those days, and went into the  
40 hill-country with haste, into a city of Judah ; and  
entered into the house of Zachariah, and saluted  
41 Elisabeth. And it came to pass, as Elisabeth  
heard the salutation of Mary, that the babe leaped  
in her womb ; and Elisabeth was filled with the  
42 Holy Spirit. And she spake out with a loud voice,

---

V. 37. *or*, no word shall be

## CHAPTER I.

and said: Blessed art thou among women, and  
blessed is the fruit of thy womb. And whence is 43  
this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come  
to me? For, behold, as the voice of thy salutation 44  
came into my ears, the babe leaped in my womb  
for joy. And happy is she, who believed that there 45  
shall be a fulfillment of the things told her from the  
Lord.

And Mary said: My soul magnifies the Lord; 46  
and my spirit rejoiced in God my Savior. Be- 47  
cause he looked upon the low estate of his hand- 48  
maid; for, behold, henceforth all generations will  
call me happy. Because the Mighty One has done 49  
great things for me; and holy is his name. And 50  
his mercy is from generation to generation, to them  
that fear him. He wrought might with his arm; 51  
he scattered the proud in the imagination of their  
hearts. He cast down princes from thrones, and 52  
exalted them of low degree. The hungry he filled 53  
with good, and the rich he sent empty away. He 54  
helped Israel, his servant; to remember mercy (as 55  
he spake unto our fathers) for Abraham and for his  
seed forever

And Mary abode with her about three months, 56  
and returned to her own house.

Now Elisabeth's full time came that she should be 57  
delivered; and she brought forth a son. And her 58

---

V. 45. *or*, for there shall be

LUKE.

neighbors and her kindred heard that the Lord had showed great mercy toward her ; and they rejoiced with her.

59 And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child ; and they called him  
60 Zachariah, after the name of his father. And his mother answered and said, Nay ; but he shall be  
61 called John. And they said to her, There is none  
62 of thy kindred that is called by this name. And they made signs to his father, how he would have  
63 him called. And he asked for a writing tablet, and wrote, saying : His name is John. And they all  
64 wondered. And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed ; and he spake, blessing  
65 God. And fear came on all that dwelt around them. And all these things were told abroad in  
66 all the hill-country of Judea. And all who heard laid them up in their hearts, saying : What then  
will this child be ! And the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And Zachariah his father was filled with the  
68 Holy Spirit, and prophesied, saying : Blessed be the Lord, the God of Israel, that he visited and  
69 wrought redemption for his people ; and raised up a horn of salvation for us, in the house of  
70 David his servant, (as he spake by the mouth of  
71 his holy prophets of old,) salvation from our ene-

---

V. 65. *or*, all these words

## CHAPTER II.

mies, and from the hand of all that hate us ; to 72  
show mercy to our fathers, and to remember his  
holy covenant ; the oath which he sware to Abra- 73  
ham our father, to grant to us, that without fear, 74  
being rescued from the hand of our enemies, we  
should serve him, in holiness and righteousness before 75  
him all our days.

And also thou, O child, shalt be called Prophet of 76  
the Highest ; for thou shalt go before the face of  
the Lord, to prepare his ways, in order to give 77  
knowledge of salvation to his people in remission of  
their sins ; through the tender mercies of our God, 78  
whereby the dayspring from on high visited us,  
to give light to those sitting in darkness and the 79  
shadow of death, in order to guide our feet into the  
way of peace.

And the child grew, and became strong in spirit, 80  
and was in the deserts till the day of his manifestation  
to Israel.

II. AND it came to pass in those days, that 1  
there went out a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that  
all the world should be registered. This register- 2  
ing was the first made when Cyrenius was governor  
of Syria. And all went to be registered, each 3  
one to his own city. And Joseph also went up 4  
from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into  
Judea, to the city of David which is called Beth-  
lehem, (because he was of the house and family of

## LUKE.

- 5 David,) to be registered with Mary his betrothed  
6 wife, who was with child. And so it was, that,  
while they were there, the days were completed  
7 that she should bring forth. And she brought  
forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swath-  
ing bands, and laid him in a manger ; because there  
was no room for them in the inn.
- 8 And there were in the same country shepherds  
abiding in the field, and keeping watch over their flock  
9 by night. And, behold, an angel of the Lord came  
upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone around  
10 them ; and they were sore afraid. And the angel  
said to them : Fear not ; for, behold, I bring you  
good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all the  
11 people. For to you is born this day in the city of  
12 David a Savior, who is Christ the Lord. And this  
shall be to you the sign : Ye shall find a babe wrap-  
13 ped in swathing bands, lying in a manger. And  
suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of  
14 the heavenly host, praising God and saying : Glory  
to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will  
among men.
- 15 And it came to pass, when the angels were gone  
away from them into heaven, that the shepherds  
said one to another : Let us go now unto Bethle-  
hem, and see this thing that is come to pass, which  
16 the Lord has made known to us. And they came  
with haste, and found both Mary and Joseph, and  
17 the babe lying in the manger. And having seen it,

## CHAPTER II.

they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child. And all that heard 18 wondered at the things which were told them by the shepherds. And Mary kept all these things, ponder- 19 ing them in her heart. And the shepherds returned, 20 glorifying and praising God for all that they had heard and seen, as it was told to them.

And when eight days were completed for circum- 21 cising him, his name was called Jesus; the name given by the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

And when the days of their purification accord- 22 ing to the law of Moses were completed, they brought him up to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord; (as it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male 23 that opens the womb shall be called holy to the Lord); and to offer a sacrifice according to what is 24 said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons.

And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose 25 name was Simeon; and this man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel; and the Holy Spirit was upon him. And it was revealed 26 to him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Christ of the Lord. And he came by the Spirit into the temple; and 27 when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do

---

V. 19. *or*, all these words

n\*

LUKE.

28 for him after the custom of the law, then he took  
29 him into his arms, and blessed God, and said : Now,  
Lord, thou lettest thy servant depart in peace, accord-  
30 ing to thy word ; because mine eyes have seen thy sal-  
31 vation, which thou hast prepared before the face of  
32 all the peoples ; a light for a revelation to the Gen-  
tiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And his father and mother marvelled at the things  
34 that were spoken of him. And Simeon blessed them,  
and said to Mary his mother : Behold, this child is  
set for the fall and rising of many in Israel, and  
35 for a sign which shall be spoken against ; (and a  
sword shall pierce through thine own soul also) ;  
that thoughts from many hearts may be revealed.

36 And there was Anna a prophetess, daughter  
of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher. She was of  
great age, and had lived with a husband seven years  
37 from her virginity ; and she was a widow of about  
fourscore and four years, who departed not from the  
temple, serving day and night with fastings and  
38 prayers. And she, coming up at that very time, like-  
wise gave thanks to the Lord, and spake of him to  
all that were looking for the redemption of Jerusa-  
lem.

39 And when they had performed all things accord-  
ing to the law of the Lord, they returned into Gali-  
40 lee, to their own city Nazareth. And the child  
grew, and became strong, being filled with wisdom ;  
and the favor of God was upon him.

## CHAPTER II.

Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at 41  
the feast of the passover. And when he was twelve 42  
years old, they went up according to the custom of  
the feast. And when they had completed the days, 43  
as they returned, Jesus the child tarried behind in Je-  
rusalem; and his parents knew it not. But supposing 44  
that he was in the company, they went a day's jour-  
ney; and they sought him among their kindred and  
acquaintance. And not finding him, they returned to 45  
Jerusalem, seeking him.

And it came to pass, that after three days they 46  
found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the  
teachers, both hearing them, and asking them ques-  
tions. And all that heard him were astonished at 47  
his understanding and answers. And seeing him 48  
they were amazed. And his mother said to him :  
Child, why hast thou thus dealt with us? Behold,  
thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing. And 49  
he said to them : How is it that ye sought me? Did  
ye not know, that I must be in my Father's house?  
And they understood not the saying which he spake 50  
to them.

And he went down with them, and came to Naza- 51  
reth, and was subject to them. And his mother  
kept all these sayings in her heart.

And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and 52  
in favor with God and men.

---

V. 49. *or*, must be in my Father's business



LUKE.

- 1 III. Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of  
Tiberius Cæsar, when Pontius Pilate was governor  
of Judea, and Herod tetrarch of Galilee, and his  
brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea and of the re-  
2 lene, when Annas was high priest and Caiaphas, the  
word of God came to John the son of Zachariah in  
3 the wilderness. And he came into all the country  
about the Jordan, preaching the immersion of re-  
4 pentance for remission of sins. As it is written  
in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet :  
The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare  
the way of the Lord, make straight his paths.  
5 Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and  
hill shall be brought low ; and the crooked shall be  
6 straight, and the rough ways smooth ; and all flesh  
shall see the salvation of God.
- 7 He said therefore to the multitudes that came  
out to be immersed by him : Brood of vipers,  
who has warned you to flee from the coming wrath ?  
8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance ;  
and begin not to say within yourselves, We have  
Abraham for our father ; for I say to you, that God  
is able of these stones to raise up children to Abra-  
9 ham. And now also the axe is laid to the root of  
the trees. Every tree therefore, that brings not forth  
good fruit, is hewn down and cast into the fire.
- 10 And the multitudes asked him, saying : What then  
11 shall we do ? He answering says to them : He that

### CHAPTER III.

has two coats, let him impart to him that has none :  
and he that has food, let him do likewise.

And there came also publicans to be immersed ; 12  
and they said to him, Teacher, what shall we do ?  
And he said to them, Exact no more than that which 13  
is appointed you. And soldiers also asked him, say- 14  
ing : What shall we also do ? And he said to them :  
Do violence to no one, neither accuse any falsely ;  
and be content with your wages.

And as the people were in expectation, and all 15  
were reasoning in their hearts concerning John,  
whether he himself were not the Christ, John an- 16  
swered them all, saying : I indeed immerse you in  
water ; but there comes he that is mightier than I,  
the latchet of whose sandals I am not worthy to un-  
loose ; he will immerse you in the Holy Spirit and  
fire. Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly 17  
cleanse his threshing-floor, and will gather the wheat  
into his garner ; but the chaff he will burn up with  
fire unquenchable.

And with many other exhortations he published 18  
the good tidings to the people.

But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him 19  
for Herodias his brother's wife, and for all the evils  
which Herod did, added to all this also, that he shut 20  
up John in prison.

Now it came to pass when all the people had been 21

## LUKE.

immersed, that as Jesus having also been immersed  
22 was praying, the heaven was opened, and the Holy  
Spirit descended in a bodily shape as a dove upon  
him ; and there came a voice out of heaven : Thou  
art my beloved Son ; in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Jesus himself was, when he began, about  
thirty years of age ; being the son (as was supposed)  
24 of Joseph, the son of Heli, the son of Matthat, the son  
of Levi, the son of Melchi, the son of Janna, the son  
25 of Joseph, the son of Matthias, the son of Amos, the  
son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the son of Naggai,  
26 the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias, the son of  
Shimei, the son of Joseph, the son of Judah, the son  
27 of Joanna, the son of Reza, the son of Zerubbabel,  
28 the son of Salathiel, the son of Neri, the son of Mel-  
chi, the son of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of  
29 Elmodam, the son of Er, the son of Joses, the son  
of Eliezer, the son of Jorim, the son of Matthat, the  
30 son of Levi, the son of Simeon, the son of Judah,  
the son of Joseph, the son of Jonan, the son of Elia-  
31 kim, the son of Meleah, the son of Mainan, the son  
of Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David,  
32 the son of Jesse, the son of Obed, the son of Boaz,  
33 the son of Salmon, the son of Nahon, the son of  
Amminadab, the son of Ram, the son of Hezron,  
34 the son of Pharez, the son of Judah, the son of Ja-  
cob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the son

---

V. 23. *or*, was beginning to be

## CHAPTER IV.

of Terah, the son of Nahor, the son of Serug, the 35  
son of Reu, the son of Peleg, the son of Eber, the  
son of Salah, the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, 36  
the son of Shem, the son of Noah, the son of Lam-  
ech, the son of Methuselah, the son of Enoch, the 37  
son of Jared, the son of Mehalaliel, the son of Cai-  
nan, the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the son of 38  
Adam, the son of God.

IV. AND Jesus, filled with the Holy Spirit, re- 1  
turned from the Jordan, and was led by the Spirit  
into the wilderness, being tempted forty days by the 2  
Devil. And he ate nothing in those days; and when  
they were ended, he hungered.

And the Devil said to him : If thou art the Son of 3  
God, command this stone that it become bread.  
And Jesus answered him, saying : It is written, Man 4  
shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of  
God.

And the Devil, taking him up into a high moun- 5  
tain, shewed him all the kingdoms of the world  
in a moment of time. And the Devil said to him : 6  
All this power will I give thee, and the glory of  
them; because it has been delivered to me, and I  
give it to whomsoever I will. If thou therefore wilt 7  
worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answer- 8  
ing said to him : It is written, Thou shalt worship  
the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him 9

## LUKE.

- on the pinnacle of the temple, and said to him : If thou art the Son of God, cast thyself down from
- 10 hence. For it is written : He shall give his angels  
11 commañd concerning thee, to keep thee ; and on  
their hands they shall bear thee up, lest haply thou  
12 dash<sup>t</sup> thy foot against a stone. And Jesus answering  
said to him : It is said, Thou shalt not tempt  
the Lord thy God.
- 13 And having finished every temptation, the Devil  
departed from him for a season.
- 14 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit  
into Galilee ; and there went out a report concern-  
15 ing him through all the surrounding country. And  
he taught in their synagogues, being honored by all.
- 16 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been  
brought up. And, as his custom was, he went into  
the synagogue on the sabbath day ; and he stood up  
17 to read. And there was delivered to him the book  
of the prophet Isaiah. And unrolling the book, he  
18 found the place where it was written : The Spirit  
of the Lord is upon me ; because he anointed me to  
publish good tidings to the poor ; he has sent me to  
to proclaim deliverance to the captives, and recover-  
19 ing of sight to the blind, to send the oppressed away  
free, to proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.
- 20 And rolling up the book he gave it again to the  
servant, and sat down. And the eyes of all in the  
21 synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to  
say to them : To day is this scripture fulfilled in

#### CHAPTER IV.

your ears. And all bare witness to him, and wondered at the words of grace which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son? And he said to them : Ye will surely say to me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself. Whatever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country. And he said : Verily I say to you, No prophet is accepted in his own country. But I tell you of a truth, there were many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when there was a great famine throughout all the land ; and to none of them was Elijah sent, but unto Zarephath of Sidonia, to a woman that was a widow. And there were many lepers in Israel, in the time of Elisha the prophet ; and none of them was cleansed, but only Naaman the Syrian. And all in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath. And they rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him to the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, to cast him down headlong. But he, passing through the midst of them, went away.

And he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee. And he was teaching them on the sabbath ; and they were astonished at his teaching, because his word was with power.

And in the synagogue there was a man having a spirit of an unclean devil ; and he cried out with a loud voice, saying : Ah ! what have we to do with

LUKE.

- thee, Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of  
35 God. And Jesus rebuked him, saying: Hold thy peace, and come out from him. And the devil throwing him in the midst came out from him, do-  
36 ing him no harm. And amazement came on all; and they spake with one another, saying: What is this word, that with authority and power he com-  
37 mands the unclean spirits, and they come out? And there went out a rumor concerning him into every place of the country around.
- 38 And he rose up and went from the synagogue, and entered into the house of Simon. And the mother-in-law of Simon was seized with a violent  
39 fever; and they besought him for her. And standing over her he rebuked the fever, and it left her; and immediately she arose and ministered to them.
- 40 Now when the sun was setting, all that had any sick with divers diseases brought them to him; and he laid his hands on each one of them, and healed  
41 them. And devils also came out from many, crying out, and saying: Thou art the Son of God. And he rebuking them suffered them not to speak, because they knew that he was the Christ.
- 42 And when it was day he went out, and went into a desert place. And the multitudes sought him, and came to him, and stayed him, that he should not de-

## CHAPTER V.

part from them. And he said to them, I must publish the good news of the kingdom of God to other cities also ; because for this I was sent forth. And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

V. AND it came to pass, as the multitude pressed upon him to hear the word of God, and he was standing by the lake of Gennesaret, that he saw two ships standing by the lake ; but the fishermen had gone out of them, and were washing the nets. And entering into one of the ships, which was Simon's, he asked him to put out a little from the land. And sitting down, he taught the multitudes out of the ship.

And when he had ceased speaking, he said to Simon : Put out into the deep ; and do ye let down your nets for a draught. And Simon answering said to him : Master, we have toiled all night and taken nothing ; but at thy word I will let down the net. And when they had done this, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes ; and their net began to break. And they beckoned to their partners in the other ship, to come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink. And Simon Peter, seeing it, fell down at the knees of Jesus, saying : Depart from me ; for I am a sinful man, O Lord. For astonishment had seized him, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken ; and like-



LUKE.

wise also James and John, sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon.

- And Jesus said to Simon : Fear not ; from hence-  
11 forth thou shalt catch men. And having brought their ships to land, they forsook all, and followed him.  
12 And it came to pass, when he was in one of the cities, that there was a man full of leprosy. And seeing Jesus he fell on his face, and besought him, saying :  
13 Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst cleanse me. And stretching forth his hand he touched him, saying : I will ; be thou cleansed. And immediately the lep-  
14 rosy departed from him. And he charged him to tell no one ; but go, and shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing as Moses commanded, for a testimony to them.  
15 But all the more went abroad the report concerning him ; and great multitudes came together to  
16 hear, and to be healed of their infirmities. And he was wont to retire into the solitary places, and pray.  
17 And it came to pass, on a certain day, that he was teaching ; and there were Pharisees and teachers of the law sitting by, who had come out of every vil-  
18 lage of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem ; and there was power of the Lord for healing them. And, behold, men brought on a bed a man who was palsied ; and they sought to bring him in, and to lay him be-  
19 fore him. And not finding by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the housetop, and let him down through the

## CHAPTER V.

tiling with the couch into the midst before Jesus. And seeing their faith he said : Man, thy sins are forgiven thee. And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying : Who is this that speaks blasphemies ? Who can forgive sins, but God alone ? But Jesus, perceiving their thoughts, answered and said to them : What reason ye in your hearts ? Which is easier, to say, Thy sins are forgiven thee ; or to say, Arise and walk ? But that ye may know that the Son of man has power on the earth to forgive sins, (he said to the palsied man,) I say to thee, Arise, and taking up thy couch go to thy house. And immediately standing up before them, he took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his house, glorifying God. And they were all amazed ; and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying : We have seen strange things to-day.

And after these things he went forth, and saw a publican, named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom ; and he said to him, Follow me. And leaving all, he arose and followed him.

And Levi made him a great feast in his own house ; and there was a great company of publicans and of others that reclined at table with them. And the Pharisees, and their scribes, murmured against his disciples, saying : Why do ye eat and drink with the publicans and sinners ? And Jesus answer-

---

V. 30. *or, the scribes and Pharisees among them*  
o\*

LUKE.

ing said to them : They that are well need not a  
32 physician, but they that are sick. I have not come  
to call righteous men; but sinners to repentance.

33 And they said to him : Why do the disciples of  
John fast often, and make prayers, and likewise  
those of the Pharisees, but thine eat and drink ?

34 And he said to them : Can ye make the sons of the  
bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with

35 them? But days will come, when the bridegroom  
shall be taken away from them; then shall they

36 fast in those days. And he spake also a parable to  
them : No one rends a piece from a new garment,

and puts it on an old garment; else both the new  
will make a rent, and the piece from the new agrees

37 not with the old. And no one puts new wine into  
old skins; else the new wine will burst the skins,

and will itself be poured out, and the skins will  
38 perish. But new wine must be put into new skins,

39 and both are preserved together. And no one hav-  
ing drunk old wine straightway desires new; for he

says, The old is better.

1 VI. AND it came to pass on the second sabbath  
after the first, that he was going through grain-

V. 34. *or, the bridemen*

V. 38. *Some ancient copies omit, and both are preserved together*

V. 39. *In the oldest copies, is good (or, is mild)*

V. 1. *or, on the second-first sabbath (omitted in some ancient copies).*

## CHAPTER VI.

fields ; and his disciples plucked and ate the ears of  
grain, rubbing them with their hands. And some 2  
of the Pharisees said : Why do ye that which it is  
not lawful to do on the sabbath? And Jesus an- 3  
swering them said : And have ye not read this,  
what David did when he hungered, himself and they  
that were with him ; how he went into the house of 4  
God, and took and ate the shewbread, and gave to  
them that were with him, which it is not lawful to  
eat except for the priests alone? And he said to 5  
them : The Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

And it came to pass also on another sabbath, 6  
that he entered into the synagogue and taught.  
And there was a man whose right hand was wither-  
ed. And the scribes and Pharisees were watching, 7  
whether he would heal on the sabbath ; that they  
might find an accusation against him. But he 8  
knew their thoughts, and said to the man having  
the withered hand : Arise, and stand forth in the  
midst. And he rose up, and stood. Then said 9  
Jesus to them : I will ask you what is lawful on  
the sabbath, to do good, or to do evil ; to save life,  
or to destroy it? And looking round on them all, 10  
he said to him, Stretch forth thy hand. And he  
did so, and his hand was restored. And they were 11  
filled with madness, and conferred one with another,  
as to what they should do to Jesus.

---

V. 9. <sup>1</sup> *In some ancient copies, whether it is lawful*

LUKE.

12 And it came to pass in those days, that he went  
out into the mountain to pray, and continued all  
13 night in prayer to God. And when it was day, he  
called to him his disciples. And having chosen from  
14 them twelve (whom he named also apostles) ; Simon,  
whom he also named Peter, and Andrew his brother,  
and James and John, and Philip and Bartholomew,  
15 and Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alph-  
16 eus, and Simon called Zelotes, and Judas brother of  
James, and Judas Iscariot, who became a betrayer ;  
17 and having come down with them, he stood on a  
plain, and a company of his disciples, and a great  
multitude of people from all Judea and Jerusalem  
and the sea-coast of Tyre and Sidon, who came to  
18 hear him, and to be healed of their diseases ; and  
19 those vexed by unclean spirits were healed ; and all  
the multitude sought to touch him, because power  
went out from him and healed them all.

20 And he, lifting up his eyes on his disciples, said :  
Happy are ye poor ; for yours is the kingdom of  
21 God. Happy are ye that hunger now ; for ye shall  
be filled. Happy are ye that weep now ; for ye  
shall laugh.

22 Happy are ye, when men shall hate you, and when  
they shall separate you from them, and shall re-  
proach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the  
23 sake of the Son of man. Rejoice in that day, and leap  
for joy ; for, behold, your reward is great in heaven ;

## CHAPTER VI.

for in the same manner did their fathers to the prophets.

But woe to you that are rich ; for ye have received your consolation. Woe to you that are full ; for ye shall hunger. Woe to you that laugh now ; for ye shall mourn and weep. Woe ! when all men shall speak well of you ; for in the same manner did their fathers to the false prophets.

But I say to you who hear : Love your enemies, do good to them that hate you, bless them that curse you, pray for them that abuse you. To him that smites thee on the cheek offer also the other ; and him that takes away thy cloak forbid not to take thy coat also.

Give to every one that asks of thee ; and of him that takes away thy goods demand them not again. And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also in like manner to them.

For if ye love them that love you, what thanks have ye ? For even the sinners love those that love them. And if ye do good to them that do good to you, what thanks have ye ? For even the sinners do the same. And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thanks have ye ? And sinners lend to sinners, that they may receive as much in return.

But love your enemies, and do good, and lend,

---

V. 28. *or*, for them that falsely accuse you

LUKE.

- hoping for nothing in return ; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be sons of the Highest ;
- 36 for he is kind to the unthankful and evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.
- 37 And judge not, and ye shall not be judged ; condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned ; acquit and ye shall be acquitted.
- 38 Give, and it shall be given to you ; good measure, pressed down, shaken together, running over, shall they give into your bosom. For with the same measure with which ye mete it shall be measured to you again.
- 39 And he spake also a parable to them : Can the blind lead the blind ? Shall they not both fall into
- 40 the ditch ? A disciple is not above the teacher ; but every one shall be perfected as his teacher.
- 41 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in
- 42 thine own eye ? How canst thou say to thy brother : Brother, let me cast out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye ? Hypocrite ! cast out first the beam out of thine eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.
- 43 For there is no good tree that bears corrupt
- 44 fruit, nor corrupt tree that bears good fruit. For every tree is known by its own fruit. For from thorns they do not gather figs, nor from a bramble

## CHAPTER VII.

bush do they harvest grapes. The good man out 45  
of the good treasure of his heart brings forth that  
which is good ; and the evil, out of the evil, brings  
forth that which is evil ; for out of the abundance  
of the heart his mouth speaks.

And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the 46  
things which I say ? Whosoever comes to me, and 47  
hears my sayings, and doeth them, I will show you  
to whom he is like. He is like a man building a 48  
house, who digged deep, and laid a foundation on the  
rock. And when a flood arose, the stream burst  
upon that house, and could not shake it ; because it  
was well builded. But he that hears, and doeth 49  
not, is like a man that built a house upon the earth  
without a foundation ; on which the stream burst,  
and immediately it fell ; and the ruin of that house  
was great.

VII. WHEN he had ended all his sayings in the 1  
hearing of the people, he entered into Capernaum.  
And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear to 2  
him, was sick and about to die. And having heard 3  
concerning Jesus, he sent to him elders of the Jews,  
asking him that he would come and heal his ser-  
vant. And they, coming to Jesus, besought him 4  
earnestly, saying : He is worthy that thou shouldst  
do this for him ; for he loves our nation, and him- 5  
self built our synagogue.

---

V. 49. *Gr.* it fell together.



LUKE.

- 6 And Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying to him : Lord, trouble not thyself ; for I am not worthy that thou shouldst enter under my roof. Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come to thee ; but say with a word, 7 and my servant will be healed. For I am a man placed under authority, having soldiers under me, and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth, and to another, Come, and he cometh ; and to my servant, 9 Do this, and he doeth it. And Jesus hearing these things, marvelled at him ; and turning said to the multitude that followed him, I say to you, I have not found so great faith, even in Israel.
- 10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.
- 11 And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain ; and many of his disciples 12 went with him, and a great multitude. And when he came near to the gate of the city, behold, a dead man was carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow ; and a great multitude of the city 13 was with her. And seeing her, the Lord had compassion on her, and said to her, Weep not. And he came and touched the bier ; and they that bare it stood still. And he said : Young man, I say to 15 thee, arise. And the dead sat up, and began to 16 speak. And he gave him to his mother. And fear seized on all ; and they glorified God, saying : A

## CHAPTER VII.

great prophet has arisen among us; and, God has visited his people. And this report went forth in 17 all Judea concerning him, and in all the country around.

And the disciples of John reported to him con- 18  
cerning all these things. And John calling to 19  
him two of his disciples sent them to Jesus,  
saying: Art thou he that cometh, or look we for  
another? And coming to him, the men said: John 20  
the Immerser has sent us to thee, saying, Art thou  
he that cometh, or look we for another? And in 21  
that very hour he cured many, of diseases and  
plagues, and evil spirits; and on many blind he be-  
stowed sight. And answering he said to them: Go, 22  
and report to John what ye have seen and heard:  
that the blind receive sight, the lame walk, the  
lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are  
raised, the poor have good tidings preached to them.  
And happy is he, whoever shall not be offended at 23  
me.

And when the messengers of John had departed, 24  
he began to say to the multitudes concerning John:  
What went ye out into the wilderness to behold?  
A reed shaken by the wind?

But what went ye out to see? A man clothed 25  
in soft raiment? Behold, they who are gorgeously  
appareled, and live delicately, are in kings' palaces.

But what went ye out to see? A prophet? Yea, 26  
I say to you, and much more than a prophet. This 27

## LUKE.

is he, of whom it is written, Behold, I send forth my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee. For I say to you, among those born of women, no one is a greater prophet than John ; but he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.

29 And all the people, hearing it, and the publicans, justified God, having been immersed with John's immersion. But the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected the counsel of God towards themselves, not having been immersed by him.

31 To what then shall I liken the men of this generation ? And to what are they like ? They are like to children sitting in the market, and calling to one another, saying : We piped to you, and ye danced not ; we sang the lament to you, and ye wept not. For John the Immerser has come, neither eating bread nor drinking wine ; and ye say, He has a devil. The Son of man has come eating and drinking ; and ye say, Behold a glutton, and a wine-drinker, a friend of publicans and sinners. But wisdom is justified on the part of all her children.

36 And one of the Pharisees asked him to eat with him. And entering into the house of the Pharisee, he reclined at table. And, behold, a woman who was a sinner in the city, learning that he is reclining at table in the house of the Pharisee, brought an alabaster box of ointment ; and standing be-

## CHAPTER VII.

hind at his feet weeping, began to wet his feet with tears, and wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

And seeing it, the Pharisee who had bidden him 39  
spake within himself, saying : This man, if he were  
a prophet, would know who and what sort of wo-  
man this is that touches him ; for she is a sinner.  
And Jesus answering said to him : Simon, I have 40  
somewhat to say to thee. And he says : Teacher,  
say on. A certain money-lender had two debtors. 41  
The one owed five hundred denáries, and the other  
fifty. And they having nothing to pay, he forgave 42  
them both. Which of them therefore, tell me, will  
love him most ? Simon answered and said, I sup- 43  
pose he to whom he forgave most. And he said to  
him, Thou hast rightly judged. And turning to the 44  
woman, he said to Simon : Seest thou this woman ?  
I entered into thy house, thou gavest me no water  
for my feet ; but she has wet my feet with  
tears, and wiped them with her hair. Thou 45  
gavest me no kiss ; but she, from the time I  
came in, has not ceased to kiss my feet. My head 46  
with oil thou didst not anoint ; but she has anointed  
my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say to thee : 47  
Her many sins are forgiven ; for she loved much.  
But to whom little is forgiven, the same loves little.

---

V. 41. Denáry, about  $7\frac{1}{2}$ d. sterling, or 15 cents.

LUKE.

48 And he said to her, Thy sins are forgiven. And  
49 they that reclined with him began to say within  
themselves, Who is this that also forgives sins?  
50 And he said to the woman : Thy faith has saved thee ;  
go in peace.

1 VIII. AND it came to pass afterward, that he  
journeyed through every city and village, preaching,  
and publishing the good news of the kingdom of  
2 God ; and the twelve with him, and certain women,  
who had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities,  
Mary called the Magdalene, from whom had gone  
3 out seven devils, and Joanna wife of Chuza Her-  
od's steward, and Susanna, and many others, who  
ministered to them of their substance.

4 And a great multitude coming together, of those  
also who came to him out of every city, he spake by  
5 a parable : The sower went forth to sow his seed.  
And as he sowed, one fell by the way side ; and it  
was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured  
6 it. And another fell upon the rock ; and when it  
had sprung up, it withered away, because it had no  
7 moisture. And another fell among the thorns ; and  
8 the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it. And  
another fell into the good ground, and sprang up,  
and bare fruit a hundredfold.

And when he had said these things, he cried : He  
that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

9 And his disciples asked him, what this para-

## CHAPTER VIII.

ble was? And he said: To you it is given to 10  
know the mysteries of the kingdom of God; but  
to the rest in parables, that seeing they may not see,  
and hearing they may not understand.

Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of 11  
God. Those by the way side are they that hear; 12  
after that comes the Devil, and takes away the word  
from their heart, that they may not believe and be  
saved. Those on the rock are they who, when they 13  
hear, with joy receive the word; and these have no  
root, who for a while believe, and in time of tempta-  
tion fall away. And that which fell among the thorns, 14  
these are they who have heard, and going forth are  
choked with the cares and riches and pleasures of  
life, and bring no fruit to perfection. But that in 15  
the good ground, these are they who, in an honest  
and good heart, having heard hold fast the word,  
and bring forth fruit with patience.

No one, when he has lighted a lamp, covers it 16  
with a vessel, or puts it under a bed; but puts it on  
a lightstand, that they who enter in may behold the  
light. For nothing is secret, that shall not be made 17  
manifest, nor hidden, that shall not be known and  
come abroad. Take heed therefore how ye hear. 18  
For whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and  
whosoever hath not, even what he seems to have  
shall be taken from him.

And his mother and his brothers came to him; 19  
and they could not come near him on account of the

LUKE.

20 multitude. And it was told him, saying : Thy  
mother and thy brothers stand without, desiring to  
21 see thee. And he answered and said to them : My  
mother and my brothers are these, who hear and do  
the word of God.

22 And it came to pass on a certain day, that he  
went into a ship with his disciples. And he said to  
them, Let us go over to the other side of the lake.

23 And they launched forth. And as they sailed, he  
fell asleep. And there came down a storm of wind  
on the lake ; and they began to be filled, and were

24 in jeopardy. And they came to him, and awoke  
him, saying : Master, Master, we perish. And he,  
rising, rebuked the wind and the raging of the wa-

25 ter ; and they ceased, and there was a calm. And  
he said to them, Where is your faith ? And they,  
fearing, wondered ; saying one to another : Who  
then is this, that he commands even the winds and  
the water, and they obey him !

26 And they sailed to the country of the Gerasenes,

27 which is over against Galilee. And when he went  
forth upon the land, there met him a certain man  
out of the city, who had devils a long time, and wore  
no clothing, and abode not in a house, but in the

28 tombs. And seeing Jesus, he cried out, and fell  
down before him, and with a loud voice said : What  
have I to do with thee, Jesus, Son of the most high

29 God ? I beseech thee, do not torment me. For he  
commanded the unclean spirit to come out from the

## CHAPTER VIII.

man. For of a long time it had seized him, and he was bound, being secured with chains and fetters ; and bursting the bands, he was driven by the devil into the deserts.

And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? 30  
And he said, Legion; because many devils had entered into him. And he besought him that he 31  
would not command them to go away into the deep.  
And there was there a herd of many swine feeding 32  
in the mountain; and they besought him that he  
would permit them to enter into them. And he  
permitted them. And going out of the man, the 33  
devils entered into the swine; and the herd rushed  
down the steep into the lake, and were choked.  
And seeing what was done the herdsmen fled, and 34  
reported it in the city and in the country. And 35  
they went out to see what was done; and they came  
to Jesus, and found the man sitting, from whom the  
devils had gone out, clothed and in his right mind,  
at the feet of Jesus; and they were afraid. They 36  
also who saw it reported to them how he that was  
possessed by devils was healed. And the whole mul- 37  
titude of the surrounding country of the Gerasenes  
besought him to depart from them; for they were  
seized with great fear.

And he, entering into the ship, returned. And 38  
the man, out of whom the devils had gone, besought  
him that he might be with him. But he sent him  
away, saying: Return to thy house, and relate how 39



LUKE.

great things God has done for thee. And he departed, and published through the whole city how great things Jesus had done for him.

40 And it came to pass, when Jesus returned, that the multitude received him; for they were all  
41 waiting for him. And, behold, there came a man whose name was Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue; and falling at the feet of Jesus, he  
42 sought him that he would come into his house; for he had an only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she was dying. And as he went the multitude thronged him.

43 And a woman having a flow of blood twelve years, who had spent all her living on physicians,  
44 and could not be healed by any one, came up behind, and touched the fringe of his garment; and  
45 immediately her flow of blood ceased. And Jesus said, Who is it that touched me? And when all denied it, Peter and those with him said: Master, the multitudes throng thee and press thee, and sayest  
46 thou, Who is it that touched me? And Jesus said, Some one touched me; for I perceived that power has gone out from me.

47 And the woman, seeing that she was not concealed, came trembling, and falling down before him, declared before all the people for what cause she touched him, and how she was healed immediately.  
48 And he said to her: Daughter, thy faith has made thee whole; go in peace.

## CHAPTER IX.

While he was yet speaking, there comes one from 49  
the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him :  
Thy daughter is dead ; trouble not the Teacher.  
But Jesus hearing it, answered him : Fear not ; 50  
only believe, and she shall be restored.

And entering into the house, he suffered no one 51  
to go in with him, save Peter and James and John,  
and the father of the maiden, and the mother. And 52  
all were weeping and bewailing her. And he said,  
Weep not ; she is not dead, but sleepeth. And they 53  
laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.  
And he, taking hold of her by the hand, called, say- 54  
ing : Maiden, arise, And her spirit returned, and 55  
she immediately arose ; and he commanded that food  
should be given her. And her parents were aston- 56  
ished. But he charged them to tell no one what  
was done.

IX. AND having called the twelve together, he 1  
gave them power and authority over all devils, and  
to cure diseases. And he sent them to preach the 2  
kingdom of God, and to heal the sick. And he 3  
said to them : Take nothing for the journey, neither  
staff, nor bag, nor bread, nor money, nor have two  
coats apiece. And into whatever house ye enter, 4  
there abide, and thence depart. And whoever will 5  
not receive you, when ye go out from that city,  
shake off even the dust from your feet for a testi-  
mony against them.

LUKE.

- 6 And going forth, they went through the villages, publishing the good news, and healing every where.
- 7 And Herod the tetrarch heard of all the things that were done. And he was perplexed, because it was said by some, that John had risen from the
- 8 dead; and by some, that Elijah had appeared; and by others, that one of the old prophets had risen
- 9 again. And Herod said: John have I beheaded; but who is this, of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.
- 10 And the apostles, returning, related to him all that they had done. And taking them with him,
- 11 he retired privately to a city called Bethsaida. And the multitudes, when they knew it, followed him. And he received them, and spake to them concerning the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing.
- 12 And the day began to decline. And the twelve came, and said to him: Dismiss the multitude, that they may go into the villages around, and the fields, and lodge, and find food; for here we are in a desert
- 13 place. And he said to them, Do ye give them to eat. And they said: We have not more than five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy
- 14 food for all this people. For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make
- 15 them lie down in companies of fifty. And they did
- 16 so, and made them all lie down. And taking the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven

## CHAPTER IX.

and blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude. And they ate, 17 and were all filled. And there were taken up of fragments that remained to them twelve baskets.

And it came to pass, as he was alone praying, that 18 his disciples were with him; and he asked them, saying: Who do the multitude say that I am? They answering said: John the Immerser; and 19 others, Elijah; and others, that one of the old prophets has risen again. And he said to them: But 20 who do ye say that I am? Peter answering said: The Christ of God. And strictly charging them, 21 he commanded them to say this to no one; saying: 22 The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected on the part of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be slain, and rise on the third day.

And he said to all: If any one will come after 23 me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. For whoever will save his life 24 shall lose it; and whoever may lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it. For what is a man 25 profited, when he has gained the whole world, and lost or forfeited himself? For whoever is ashamed 26 of me and of my words, of him will the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his glory, and in that of the Father and of the holy angels. And I 27 tell you of a truth, there are some of those standing here, who shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God.

## LUKE.

- 28 And it came to pass about eight days after these sayings, that he took with him Peter and John and James, and went up into the mountain to pray.
- 29 And as he prayed, the appearance of his countenance became changed, and his raiment white and
- 30 glistening. And, behold, two men were talking with him, who were Moses and Elijah; who appeared in glory, and spake of his departure which he should fulfill in Jerusalem.
- 32 But Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep; and awaking, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him. And it came to pass, that as they were departing from him, Peter said to Jesus: Master, it is good for us to be here; and let us make three tents, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah; not knowing what he
- 34 said. While he said this, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them; and they feared as they entered into the cloud. And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying: This is my chosen Son; hear ye him.
- 36 And when the voice had come, Jesus was found alone. And they kept silent, and told no one in those days any of the things which they had seen.
- 37 And it came to pass, that on the next day, when they had come down from the mountain, a great
- 38 multitude met him. And, behold, a man from the multitude cried, saying: Teacher, I beseech thee, look upon my son; for he is my only child. And,

## CHAPTER IX,

behold, a spirit takes him, and he suddenly cries out ;  
and it tears him with foaming, and hardly departs  
from him, bruising him. And I entreated thy dis- 40  
ciples to cast him out ; and they could not.

And Jesus answering said : O faithless and per- 41  
verse generation, how long shall I be with you, and  
bear with you ? Bring hither thy son. And while 42  
he was yet coming, the devil threw him down, and  
tare him. And Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit,  
and healed the child, and gave him back to his  
father. And all were amazed at the mighty power 43  
of God.

But while all were wondering at all things which  
Jesus did, he said to his disciples : Do ye let these 44  
words sink into your ears ; for the Son of man shall  
be delivered into the hands of men. But they un- 45  
derstood not this saying, and it was hidden from  
them, that they perceived it not ; and they feared  
to ask him concerning that saying.

And there arose in them the thought, which of 46  
them was greatest. And Jesus, perceiving the 47  
thought of their heart, took a child and set him by  
him, and said to them : Whoever shall receive this 48  
child in my name receives me ; and whoever shall  
receive me, receives him that sent me ; for he that  
is least among you all, the same is great.

And John answering said : Master, we saw one 49

---

V. 46. *or*, there arose a dispute among them

LUKE.

casting out devils in thy name ; and we forbade him,  
50 because he follows not with us. And Jesus said to  
him : Forbid him not ; for he that is not against us  
is for us.

51 And it came to pass, when the days were being  
completed that he should be received up, he stead-  
52 fastly set his face to go to Jerusalem. And he sent  
messengers before his face ; and they went and en-  
tered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready  
53 for him. And they did not receive him, because his  
54 face was directed toward Jerusalem. And his dis-  
ciples, James and John, seeing it said : Lord, wilt  
thou that we command fire to come down from  
55 heaven, and consume them, as also Elijah did ? And  
he turned, and rebuked them, and said : Ye know  
56 not of what spirit ye are. And they went to an-  
other village.

57 And as they were going in the way, a certain one  
said to him, I will follow thee whithersoever thou  
58 goest. And Jesus said to him : The foxes have  
holes, and the birds of the air have nests ; but the  
Son of man has not where he may lay his head.

59 And he said to another, Follow me. But he said :  
Lord, permit me first to go and bury my father.  
60 And he said to him : Let the dead bury their own  
dead ; but do thou go and announce the kingdom  
of God.

## CHAPTER X.

And another also said : I will follow thee, Lord ; 61  
but first permit me to bid farewell to those in my  
house. And Jesus said to him : No one, having 62  
put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit  
for the kingdom of God.

X. AFTER these things the Lord appointed also 1  
seventy others, and sent them two and two before  
his face, into every city and place, whither he him-  
self was about to come. And he said to them : The 2  
harvest indeed is great, but the laborers are few.  
Pray therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will  
send forth laborers into his harvest. Go your ways ; 3  
behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves.  
Carry neither purse, nor bag, nor sandals ; and sa- 4  
lute no one by the way. And into whatever house 5  
ye enter, first say : Peace be to this house. And if 6  
a son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon  
it ; and if not, it shall return to you. And in that 7  
house remain, eating and drinking such things as  
they give ; for the laborer is worthy of his hire. Go  
not from house to house. And whatever city ye enter 8  
and they receive you, eat what is set before you ; and 9  
heal the sick that are therein, and say to them : The  
kingdom of God has come nigh unto you. But 10  
whatever city ye enter and they receive you not, go  
out into the streets of the same, and say : Even the 11

---

V. 7. *or*, as they have



LUKE.

- dust of your city that cleaves to our feet, we wipe off to you ; yet know this, that the kingdom of
- 12 God has come nigh. I say to you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city.
- 13 Woe to thee, Chorazin ! Woe to thee, Bethsaida ! For if the miracles had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they would long ago have repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.
- 14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon
- 15 in the judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, that art exalted to heaven, shalt be brought down to the underworld.
- 16 He that hears you, hears me ; and he that rejects you, rejects me ; and he that rejects me, rejects him that sent me.
- 17 And the seventy returned with joy, saying : Lord,
- 18 even the devils are subject to us in thy name. And he said to them : I beheld Satan fall as lightning
- 19 from heaven. Behold, I have given you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy ; and nothing shall hurt you.
- 20 But yet, rejoice not in this, that the spirits are subject to you ; but rejoice, that your names are written in heaven.
- 21 In that hour he rejoiced in spirit, and said : I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them to babes ; yea, O,

## CHAPTER X.

Father, that so it seemed good in thy sight. All 22  
things are delivered to me by my Father; and no  
one knows who the Son is but the Father, and who  
the Father is but the Son, and he to whom the Son  
is pleased to reveal him.

And turning to the disciples, he said privately: 23  
Happy are the eyes that behold what ye are be-  
holding. For I say to you, that many prophets 24  
and kings desired to see what ye are beholding, and  
saw not, and to hear what ye are hearing, and heard  
not.

And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, tempting 25  
him, saying: Teacher, what shall I do to inherit  
eternal life? He said to him, What is written in 26  
the law? How readest thou? And he answering 27  
said: Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all  
thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy  
strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbor  
as thyself. And he said to him: Thou hast answer- 28  
ed right. This do, and thou shalt live. But he, 29  
desiring to justify himself, said to Jesus: Who then  
is my neighbor?

And Jesus answering said: A certain man was 30  
going down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell  
among robbers, who stripped him of his raiment, and  
wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead.  
And by chance a certain priest was going down 31  
that way; and seeing him, he passed by on the other

LUKE.

32 side. And in like manner also a Levite, arriving at the place, came and saw, and passed by on the other side.

33 And a certain Samaritan, as he was journey-  
ing, came where he was, and seeing him had com-  
34 passion ; and went to him, and bound up his  
wounds, pouring in oil and wine ; and setting him  
on his own beast, he brought him to an inn, and  
35 took care of him. And on the morrow when he  
departed, he took out two denáries and gave to the  
host, and said : Take care of him ; and whatever  
thou spendest more, when I come again, I will re-  
pay thee.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was  
37 neighbor to him that fell among the robbers ? And  
he said, He that had mercy on him. And Jesus  
said to him : Go, and do thou likewise.

38 Now it came to pass, as they were going, that he  
entered into a certain village ; and a certain woman  
39 named Martha received him into her house. And  
she had a sister called Mary, who also sat at the  
40 feet of Jesus, and heard his word. But Martha was  
encumbered with much serving ; and she came to  
him, and said : Lord, dost thou not care that my  
sister has left me to serve alone ? Bid her therefore  
41 that she help me. And Jesus answering said to her :

---

V. 35. Denáry,  $7\frac{1}{2}$ d. sterling, or fifteen cents (one third more than the daily pay of a Roman soldier).

## CHAPTER XI.

Martha, Martha, thou art anxious and troubled about many things. But one thing is needful ; and 42  
Mary has chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

XI. AND it came to pass, that as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said to him : Lord, teach us to pray, as also John taught his disciples. And he said to them, When ye pray, say : Father, hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Give us day by day our daily bread. And forgive us our sins ; for we ourselves forgive every one indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation. 1 2 3 4

And he said to them : Who of you shall have a friend, and shall go to him at midnight, and say to him, Friend, lend me three loaves ; for a friend of mine is come to me from a journey, and I have nothing to set before him ; and he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not ; the door is now shut, and my children with me are in bed ; I can not rise and give thee ? I say to you, though he will not rise and give him because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needs. I also say to you : Ask, and it shall be given you ; seek, and ye shall find ; knock, and it shall be opened to you. For every 10 5 6 7 8 9

---

V. 3. *or*, our needful bread

LUKE.

- one that asketh receiveth ; and he that seeketh findeth ; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.
- 11 And what father is there among you, of whom if his son ask bread, he will give him stone ; or a  
12 fish, will instead of a fish give him a serpent ? Or if he shall ask an egg, will he give him a scorpion ?  
13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children ; how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him ?  
14 And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the devil was gone out, the dumb man spake ; and the multitudes wondered.  
15 But some of them said : He casts out the devils  
16 through Beelzebul the chief of the devils. And others, tempting, sought of him a sign from heaven.  
17 But he, knowing their thoughts, said to them : Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation, and a house divided against a house falls.  
18 And if Satan also is divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand ? because ye say that I cast out the devils through Beelzebul.  
19 And if I through Beelzebul cast out devils, through whom do your sons cast them out ? Therefore they  
20 shall be your judges ? But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, then is the kingdom of God come near to you.  
21 When a strong man armed keeps his palace, his

---

V. 17. *or*, and house falls upon house

## CHAPTER XI.

goods are in peace. But when a stronger than he 22  
shall come upon him and overcome him, he takes  
away his whole armor, wherein he trusted, and  
divides his spoils.

He that is not with me is against me; and he that 23  
gathers not with me scatters abroad.

When the unclean spirit is gone out from the 24  
man, he goes through dry places, seeking rest; and  
not finding it, he says, I will return into my house  
whence I came out. And coming, he finds it swept 25  
and set in order. Then goes he, and takes with him 26  
seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and  
they enter in and dwell there; and the last state of  
that man becomes worse than the first.

And it came to pass, as he was saying these 27  
things, that a certain woman lifting up her voice  
from the multitude, said to him: Happy the  
womb that bare thee, and breasts which thou hast  
sucked! And he said: Yea, rather, Happy they 28  
that hear the word of God, and keep it!

And the multitudes gathering more and more, 29  
he began to say: This generation is an evil genera-  
tion. It seeks a sign; and no sign shall be given  
it, but the sign of Jonah. For as Jonah became a 30  
sign to the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man  
be to this generation.

A queen of the south shall rise up in the judg- 31  
ment with the men of this generation, and shall con-  
demn them; because she came from the utmost parts

LUKE.

of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and,  
32 behold, a greater than Solomon is here. Men of  
Nineveh shall rise in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it; because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, a greater than Jonah is here.

33 No one, when he has lighted a lamp, puts it in a secret place, or under the bushel, but on the light-stand, that they who come in may see the light.

34 The lamp of the body is thine eye. When thine eye is single, thy whole body also is light; but when  
35 it is evil, thy body also is dark. Take heed there-  
36 fore, lest the light that is in thee is darkness. If therefore thy whole body is light, having no part dark, it shall be all light as when the lamp, with its bright shining, gives thee light.

37 And as he was speaking, a Pharisee asked him to dine with him; and he went in, and reclined at  
38 table. And seeing it the Pharisee marvelled that he had not first immersed himself before dinner.

39 And the Lord said to him: Now ye Pharisees cleanse the outside of the cup and the platter; but your inward part is full of rapacity and wickedness.  
40 Fools! did not he, who made the outside, make the  
41 inside also? But give that which ye have in alms; and, behold, all things are clean to you.

42 But woe to you, Pharisees! because ye pay tithe

---

V. 35. *or*, whether the light that is in thee is darkness

V. 41. *or*, give that which is within

## CHAPTER XI.

of mint and rue and every herb, and pass by judgment and the love of God. These ought ye to have done, and not to leave those undone.

Woe to you, Pharisees! because ye love the first 43 seat in the synagogues, and the greetings in the markets.

Woe to you! because ye are as tombs that appear not, and men walking over them know it not.

And a certain one of the lawyers answering says 45 to him: Teacher, in saying these things thou reproachest us also. And he said: Woe to you 46 lawyers also! because ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

Woe to you! because ye build the sepulchres of 47 the prophets, and your fathers killed them. So 48 then ye bear witness to and approve the deeds of your fathers; because they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres. Therefore also said the 49 wisdom of God: I will send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they will slay and persecute; that the blood of all the prophets, which was 50 shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation, from the blood of Abel 51 unto the blood of Zachariah, who perished between the altar and the temple. Verily I say to you, it shall be required of this generation.

---

V. 48. *In some ancient copies, and ye build!*



LUKE.

- 52 Woe to you lawyers! because ye have taken away the key of knowledge; ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.
- 53 And as he said these things to them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to urge him vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things; lying in wait for him, seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

1 XII. IN the mean time, the multitude having gathered together in tens of thousands, so that they trode one upon another, he began first to say to his disciples: Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed, nor hidden, that shall not be known. Wherefore, whatever ye have said in the darkness shall be heard in the light; and what ye have spoken in the ear in closets shall be proclaimed on the housetops.

4 And I say to you, my friends, be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. But I will warn you whom ye shall fear; fear him, who after he has killed has power to cast into hell; yea, I say to you, fear him.

6 Are not five sparrows sold for two pence? And not one of them is forgotten before God. But even

---

V. 53. *Gr.* to answer off-hand concerning many things

## CHAPTER XII.

the hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not ;  
ye are of more value than many sparrows.

And I say to you : Whosoever shall confess me 8  
before men, him shall the Son of man also confess  
before the angels of God ; but he that denied me 9  
before men shall be denied before the angels of God.  
And whoever shall speak a word against the Son 10  
of man, it shall be forgiven him ; but to him that  
blasphemes against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be  
forgiven.

And when they bring you to the synagogues, and 11  
magistrates, and authorities, take not thought how  
or what ye shall answer, or what ye shall say. For 12  
the Holy Spirit shall teach you in that very hour  
what ye ought to say.

And a certain one of the multitude said to him : 13  
Teacher, speak to my brother, that he divide the  
inheritance with me. And he said to him : Man, 14  
who made me a judge or a divider over you ? And 15  
he said to them : Take heed, and beware of all  
covetousness ; because a man's life consists not in  
the abundance of his possessions.

And he spake a parable to them, saying : The 16  
ground of a certain rich man brought forth plenti-  
fully. And he thought within himself, saying : 17  
What shall I do, because I have not where to  
store my fruits ? And he said : This will I do ; I 18  
will pull down my barns, and will build greater ;  
and there will I store all my fruits and my goods.

LUKE.

- 19 And I will say to my soul : Soul, thou hast many  
goods laid up for many years ; take thine ease, eat,  
20 drink, be merry. But God said to him, Fool ! this  
night thy soul shall be required of thee ; and whose  
shall those things be, which thou hast provided ?  
21 So is he that lays up treasure for himself, and is  
not rich toward God.
- 22 And he said to his disciples : Therefore I say to you,  
take not thought for the life, what ye shall eat, nor  
23 for the body, what ye shall put on. The life is more  
24 than food, and the body than raiment. Consider  
the ravens, that they sow not nor reap ; which have  
neither storehouse nor barn ; and God feeds them.  
25 How much better are ye than the fowls ? And  
which of you by taking thought can add a cubit to  
26 his stature ? If therefore ye can not do even that  
which is least, why take ye thought for the rest ?
- 27 Consider the lilies, how they grow ; they toil not,  
nor spin ; and I say to you, that even Solomon, in  
all his glory, was not arrayed like one of these.  
28 And if God so clothes the grass, which to-day is in  
the field, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, how  
29 much more you, O ye of little faith ? And ye, seek  
not what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, and be  
30 not of a doubtful mind. For all these things do the  
nations of the world seek after ; and your Father  
31 knows that ye have need of these. But seek his  
kingdom, and these things shall be added to you.

## CHAPTER XII.

Fear not, little flock ; for it is your Father's good 32  
pleasure to give you the kingdom. Sell that ye have, 33  
and give alms ; provide yourselves purses that wax  
not old, a treasure unfailing in the heavens, where  
a thief approaches not, nor moth corrupts. For 34  
where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

Let your loins be girded about, and your lamps 35  
burning ; and ye like men waiting for their lord, 36  
when he shall return from the wedding ; that, when  
he comes and knocks, they may open to him imme-  
diately. Happy those servants, whom their lord 37  
when he comes shall find watching ! Verily I say  
to you, that he will gird himself, and make them re-  
cline at table, and will come forth and serve them.  
And if he shall come in the second watch, or in the 38  
third watch, and find it so, happy are those servants.  
And this know, that if the master of the house had 39  
known at what hour the thief is coming, he would  
have watched, and not have suffered his house to be  
broken through. Be ye also ready ; for at an hour 40  
when ye think not the Son of man comes.

And Peter said to him : Lord, speakest thou this 41  
parable to us, or also to all ? And the Lord said : 42  
Who then is the faithful, the wise steward, whom  
his lord will set over his household, to give the por-  
tion of food in due season ? Happy that servant, 43  
whom his lord when he comes shall find so doing !  
Of a truth I say to you, that he will make him ruler 44  
over all his goods.

LUKE.

45 But if that servant say in his heart, My lord delays his coming ; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maid-servants, and to eat and drink,  
46 and to be drunken ; the lord of that servant will come in a day when he looks not for it, and in an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the faithless.

47 And that servant, who knew his lord's will, and prepared not, nor did according to his will, shall be  
48 beaten with many stripes. But he that knew not, and did things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For to whomsoever much is given, of him much will be required ; and to whom they have' committed much, of him they will require the more.

49 I came to send fire upon the earth ; and what will  
50 I, if it is already kindled ? But I have an immersion to undergo ; and how am I straitened till it be  
51 accomplished ! Suppose ye that I came to give peace in the earth ? I tell you, nay ; but only di-  
52 vision. For from this time forth, five in one house shall be divided, three against two, and two against  
53 three. They shall be divided, father against son, and son against father ; mother against the daughter, and daughter against the mother ; mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and daughter-in-law against the mother-in-law.

---

V. 49. *or*, and how I would it were already kindled !

### CHAPTER XIII.

And he said also to the multitudes : When ye see 54  
the cloud rising from the west, straightway ye say,  
A shower is coming ; and so it comes to pass. And 55  
when ye see a south wind blowing, ye say, There  
will be heat ; and it comes to pass. Hypocrites ! 56  
Ye know how to judge of the face of the earth and  
the sky ; but how is it that ye know not how to  
judge of this time ? And why even of yourselves do 57  
ye not judge what is right ? For when thou art 58  
going with thine adversary to the magistrate, on the  
way give diligence that thou mayest be delivered  
from him ; lest he drag thee to the judge, and the  
judge deliver thee to the exactor, and the exactor  
cast thee into prison. I say to thee, thou shalt not 59  
depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

XIII. THERE were present at that season some 1  
that brought him word concerning the Galileans,  
whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.  
And answering he said to them : Suppose ye that 2  
these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans,  
because they have suffered such things ? I tell you, 3  
nay ; but, except ye repent, ye shall all in like man-  
ner perish. Or those eighteen, on whom the tower 4  
in Siloam fell, and slew them, suppose ye that they  
were sinners above all the men that dwell in Jeru-  
salem ? I tell you, nay ; but, except ye repent, ye 5  
shall all in like manner perish.

He spake also this parable : A certain man had 6

## LUKE,

a fig tree planted in his vineyard ; and he came seeking fruit thereon, and found none. And he said to the vine-dresser : Behold, three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none. Cut it down ; why does it also encumber the ground ? And he answering says to him : Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and cast in manure. And if it bear fruit, [well] ; and if not, hereafter thou shalt cut it down.

And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath. And, behold, there was a woman who had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and wholly unable to raise herself up. And Jesus seeing her, called her to him, and said to her : Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid his hands on her ; and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. And the ruler of the synagogue answering (being indignant because Jesus healed on the sabbath,) said to the multitude : There are six days in which it is proper to work ; in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath. And the Lord answered him, and said : Hypocrites ! does not each of you on the sabbath loose his ox or ass from the manger, and lead him away to water him ? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan has bound, lo, eighteen years, to

---

V. 7. *or, impoverish the ground*

## CHAPTER XIII.

be loosed from this bond on the sabbath? And as 17  
he said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed ;  
and all the multitude rejoiced for all the glorious  
things that were done by him.

He said therefore : To what is the kingdom of 18  
God like? And to what shall I liken it? It is 19  
like a grain of mustard, which a man took, and cast  
into his garden ; and it grew, and became a great  
tree, and the fowls of the air lodged in its branches.

And again he said : To what shall I liken 20  
the kingdom of God? It is like leaven, which a 21  
woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till  
the whole was leavened.

And he went through cities and villages, teach- 22  
ing, and journeying toward Jerusalem.

And a certain one said to him : Lord, are there 23  
few that are saved? And he said to them : Strive 24  
to enter in through the strait gate ; for many, I say  
to you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.  
When once the master of the house has risen and 25  
shut the door, and ye begin to stand without, and  
to knock at the door, saying, Lord, open to us, and he  
answering shall say to you, I know you not whence  
ye are ; then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten 26  
and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in  
our streets. And he shall say, I tell you, I know 27  
not whence ye are ; depart from me, all workers of  
unrighteousness. There shall be weeping and gnash- 28  
ing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac,



LUKE.

and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of  
29 God, and yourselves thrust out. And they shall  
come from east and west, and from north and south,  
and shall recline at table in the kingdom of God.

30 And, behold, there are last who shall be first, and  
there are first who shall be last.

31 On that day there came certain Pharisees, saying  
to him : Depart, and go hence ; for Herod intends to  
32 kill thee. And he said to them : Go, tell that fox,  
Behold, I cast out devils and perform cures to-day  
and to-morrow, and the third day I am perfected.

33 But yet, I must go to-day, and to-morrow, and  
the day following ; because it may not be that a  
prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

34 Jerusalem ! Jerusalem ! that killeth the prophets,  
and stoneth those sent to her ; how often would I  
have gathered thy children together, as a hen her  
35 brood under her wings, and ye would not ! Behold,  
your house is left to you desolate. And I say to  
you : Ye shall not see me, until the time come when  
ye shall say, Blessed is he that comes in the name  
of the Lord.

1 XIV. AND it came to pass, as he went into the  
house of one of the chief of the Pharisees to eat  
2 bread on the sabbath, that they watched him. And,  
behold, there was a certain man before him who had  
3 the dropsy. And Jesus answering spake to the law-  
yers and Pharisees, saying : Is it lawful to heal on

#### CHAPTER XIV.

the sabbath, or not? And they were silent. And 4  
taking hold of him, he healed him, and let him go.  
And to them he said: Who is there of you, whose 5  
ox or ass shall fall into a pit, and he will not straight-  
way draw him up on the sabbath day? And they 6  
could not answer him again to these things.

And he spake a parable to those who were bidden, 7  
when he marked how they chose out the first places;  
saying to them: When thou art bidden by any one 8  
to a wedding, recline not in the first place at table,  
lest one more honorable than thou may have been  
bidden by him; and he that bade thee and him shall 9  
come and say to thee, Give place to this man; and  
then thou shalt begin with shame to take the lowest  
place. But when thou art bidden, go and recline in 10  
the lowest place; that when he that bade thee comes,  
he may say to thee, Friend, go up higher. Then  
shalt thou have honor in the presence of them that  
recline at table with thee. For every one that ex- 11  
alts himself shall be humbled; and he that humbles  
himself shall be exalted.

And he said also to him that bade him: When 12  
thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends,  
nor thy brothers, nor thy kinsmen, nor rich neigh-  
bors; lest they also bid thee again, and a recom-  
pense be made thee. But when thou makest a feast, 13  
call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind. And 14

---

V. 5. *In the oldest copies*: whose son, or ox,

LUKE.

happy shalt thou be, because they can not recompense thee ; for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the righteous.

15 And a certain one of them that reclined at table with him, hearing these things, said to him : Happy is he, who shall eat bread in the kingdom of God !

16 And he said to him : A certain man made a great  
17 supper, and bade many. And he sent his servant, at the hour of the supper, to say to them that were

18 bidden : Come, for all things are now ready. And they all, with one mind, began to excuse themselves.

The first said to him : I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go out and see it ; I pray

19 thee let me be excused. And another said : I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I am going to prove

20 them ; I pray thee let me be excused. And another said : I have married a wife ; and therefore I can not come.

21 And the servant came, and reported these things to his lord. Then the master of the house, being angry, said to his servant : Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the

22 poor, and maimed, and lame, and blind. And the servant said : Lord, it is done as thou hast com-

23 manded, and yet there is room. And the Lord said to the servant : Go out into the highways and

---

V. 18. *or*, they all, at once, began

V. 23. *or*, and constrain them

#### CHAPTER XIV.

hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say to you, that none of those 24 men who were bidden shall taste of my supper.

And there went great multitudes with him. And 25 he turned and said to them : If any one comes to 26 me, and hates not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brothers, and sisters, and even his own life besides, he can not be my disciple. And 27 whoever does not bear his cross, and come after me, can not be my disciple. For who of you, intending 28 to build a tower, does not first sit down, and count the cost, whether he has sufficient to finish it? Lest 29 haply, when he has laid a foundation, and is not able to finish, all that behold begin to mock him, saying : This man began to build, and was 30 not able to finish. Or what king, going to make 31 war against another king, does not first sit down and consult, whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him that comes against him with twenty thousand? Else, while he is yet a great way off, 32 he sends an embassy, and desires conditions of peace.

So then, whoever of you forsakes not all that he 33 hath can not be my disciple. Salt therefore is 34 good ; but if even the salt has lost its savor, where-with shall it be seasoned? It is fit neither for the 35 land, nor for the dunghill ; they cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

LUKE.

- 1 XV. AND there were drawing near to him all  
2 the publicans and the sinners to hear him. And  
the Pharisees and the scribes murmured, saying :  
This man receives sinners, and eats with them.
- 3 And he spake this parable to them, saying : What  
4 man of you, having a hundred sheep, if he lose one  
of them, does not leave the ninety and nine in the  
wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he  
5 finds it? And when he has found it, he lays it on  
6 his shoulders, rejoicing. And coming home, he  
calls together his friends and neighbours, saying to  
them : Rejoice with me ; for I have found my sheep  
7 which was lost. I say to you: So shall there be joy  
in heaven over one sinner that repents, more than  
over ninety and nine just persons who have no need  
of repentance.
- 8 Or what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she  
lose one piece, does not light a lamp, and sweep the  
9 house, and seek carefully till she finds it? And  
when she has found it, she calls her friends and  
neighbors together, saying : Rejoice with me ; for  
10 I have found the piece which I had lost. So, I say  
to you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of  
God over one sinner that repents.
- 11 And he said: A certain man had two sons.  
12 And the younger of them said to his father :  
Father, give me the portion of the property that  
falls to me. And he divided to them his living.  
13 And not many days after, the younger son gathered

## CHAPTER XV.

all together, and went abroad into a far country,  
and there wasted his substance in riotous living.  
And when he had spent all, there arose a grievous 14  
famine in that country ; and he began to be in want.  
And he went and joined himself to one of the citi- 15  
zens of that country ; and he sent him into his fields  
to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his 16  
belly with the husks which the swine ate ; and no  
one gave to him. And coming to himself, he said : 17  
How many hired servants of my father have bread  
enough and to spare, and I perish here with hunger !  
I will arise and go to my father, and will say to 18  
him : Father, I have sinned against heaven, and be-  
fore thee. I am no longer worthy to be called thy 19  
son ; make me as one of thy hired servants.

And he arose, and came to his father. But when 20  
he was yet a great way off, his father saw him and  
had compassion, and ran and fell on his neck, and  
kissed him. And the son said to him : Father, I 21  
have sinned against heaven, and before thee ; I am  
no longer worthy to be called thy son. But the 22  
father said to his servants : Bring forth a robe, the  
best, and put it on him ; and put a ring on his hand,  
and sandals on his feet ; and bring the fatted calf, 23  
and kill it ; and let us eat and be merry. Because 24  
this my son was dead and is alive again, was lost  
and is found. And they began to be merry.

Now his elder son was in the field. And as he 25  
came, and drew nigh to the house, he heard music

LUKE.

26 and dancing. And calling to him one of the  
servants, he inquired what these things meant.  
27 And he said to him : Thy brother is come ; and thy  
father has killed the fatted calf, because he has re-  
28 ceived him safe and sound. And he was angry, and  
would not go in ; and his father came out, and en-  
29 treated him. And he answering said to his father :  
Lo, so many years do I serve thee, and never trans-  
gressed thy command ; and to me thou never gavest  
a kid, that I might make merry with my friends.  
30 But when this thy son came, who devoured thy  
living with harlots, thou didst kill for him the fatted  
31 calf. And he said to him : Child, thou art ever  
32 with me, and all that I have is thine. It was meet  
that we should make merry, and be glad ; because  
this thy brother was dead and is alive again ; and  
was lost, and is found.

1 XVI. AND he said also to the disciples : There  
was a certain rich man, who had a steward ; and  
the same was accused to him as wasting his goods.  
2 And having called him, he said to him : What is this  
that I hear of thee ? Give account of thy steward-  
3 ship ; for thou canst be no longer steward. Then  
the steward said within himself : What shall I do ?  
for my master takes away from me the stewardship.  
4 I am not able to dig ; to beg I am ashamed. I am  
resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the  
stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.

## CHAPTER XVI.

And having called to him each one of his master's 5  
debtors, he said to the first, How much owest thou  
to my master? And he said, A hundred measures 6  
of oil. And he said to him: Take thy bill, and sit  
down quickly, and write fifty. Then he said to 7  
another, And how much owest thou? And he  
said, A hundred measures of wheat. And he said  
to him: Take thy bill, and write fourscore. And 8  
the master commended the unjust steward, because  
he had done wisely; because the sons of this world  
are in their generation wiser than the sons of light.  
And I say to you: Make to yourselves friends of the 9  
mammon of unrighteousness; that, when it fails, they  
may receive you into the everlasting habitations.  
He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful 10  
also in much; and he that is unjust in the least is  
unjust also in much. If therefore ye were not faith- 11  
ful in the unrighteous mammon, who will entrust to  
you the true riches? And if ye were not faithful 12  
in that which is another's, who will give to you  
your own? No servant can serve two masters; for 13  
either he will hate the one, and love the other, or  
he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye can  
not serve God and Mammon.

And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard 14  
all these things; and they derided him. And he 15  
said to, them: Ye are they who justify themselves  
before men; but God knows your hearts; for that



## LUKE.

which is highly esteemed among men is abomination before God.

- 16 The law and the prophets were until John ; from that time the good news of the kingdom of God is  
17 published, and every man presses into it. And it is easier that heaven and earth should pass away, than that one tittle of the law should fail.
- 18 Every one who puts away his wife, and marries another, commits adultery ; and he who marries her when put away from a husband commits adultery.
- 19 There was a certain rich man, who was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every  
20 day. And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, who was laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs that fell from the rich man's table. Moreover the dogs came and  
22 licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the beggar died ; and he was borne away by the angels into Abraham's bosom. The rich man also died, and  
23 was buried ; and in the underworld, lifting up his eyes, being in torments, he sees Abraham afar off, and  
24 Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said : Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue ; for I am tormented in this  
25 flame. But Abraham said : Child, remember that in thy lifetime thou receivedst thy good things ; and Lazarus in like manner his evil things ; but now here, he is comforted and thou art tormented.

## CHAPTER XVII.

And besides all this, between us and you a great 26  
gulf is fixed ; that they who would pass from hence  
to you may not be able, nor those from thence pass  
over to us. Then he said : I pray thee therefore, 27  
father, that thou wouldst send him to my father's  
house. For I have five brothers ; that he may tes- 28  
tify to them, that they may not also come into this  
place of torment. Abraham says to him : They 29  
have Moses and the prophets ; let them hear them.  
And he said : Nay, father Abraham ; but if one 30  
should go to them from the dead, they will repent.  
And he said to him : If they hear not Moses and the 31  
prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one  
should rise from the dead.

XVII. AND he said to his disciples : It is im- 1  
possible that causes of offense should not come ; but  
woe to him through whom they come ! It were 2  
better for him that a millstone were placed about  
his neck, and he were thrown into the sea, than that  
he should cause one of these little ones to offend.

Take heed to yourselves. If thy brother sin, re- 3  
buke him ; and if he repent, forgive him. And if 4  
he sin against thee seven times in the day, and seven  
times turn to thee saying, I repent, thou shalt for-  
give him.

And the apostles said to the Lord, Increase our 5  
faith. And the Lord said : If ye had faith as a 6  
grain of mustard, ye would say to this sycamine

LUKE.

tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and planted in the sea ; and it would have obeyed you.

7 And who of you, having a servant ploughing or feeding cattle, will say to him immediately, when he has come in from the field, Come and recline at  
8 table ; and will not rather say to him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken, and afterward thou  
9 shalt eat and drink? Does he thank that servant, because he did the things that were commanded?  
10 I think not. So also ye, when ye shall have done all the things that were commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants ; we have done that which was our duty to do.

11 And it came to pass, as he was going to Jerusalem, that he went through the midst of Samaria and  
12 Galilee. And as he was entering into a certain village, there met him ten leprous men, who stood afar  
13 off. And they lifted up their voice, saying : Jesus,  
14 Master, have mercy on us. And seeing, he said to them : Go, shew yourselves to the priests. And it came to pass that, as they went, they were cleansed.  
15 And one of them, seeing that he was healed, turned  
16 back, with a loud voice glorifying God, and fell down on his face at his feet, giving thanks to him ;  
17 and he was a Samaritan. And Jesus answering said : Were not the ten cleansed? And where are  
18 the nine? Were none found returning to give glory

## CHAPTER XVII.

to God, except this stranger? And he said to him : 19  
Arise, and go ; thy faith has made thee whole.

And being asked by the Pharisees, when the king- 20  
dom of God should come, he answered them and  
said : The kingdom of God comes not with obser-  
vation ; nor shall they say, Lo here ! or, Lo there ! 21  
for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

And he said to the disciples, Days will come, when 22  
ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of  
man, and ye shall not see it. And they will say to 23  
you, See here ; or, See there ; go not away, and fol-  
low not. For as the lightning, that lightens out of 24  
the one part under heaven, shines unto the other  
part under heaven, so shall the Son of man be in  
his day. But first he must suffer many things, and 25  
be rejected on the part of this generation.

And as it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be 26  
also in the days of the Son of man. They ate, they 27  
drank, they married, they were given in marriage,  
until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and  
the flood came and destroyed all. In like manner 28  
also as it was in the days of Lot ; they ate, they  
drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they  
builded ; but the same day that Lot went out from 29  
Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven,  
and destroyed all. After the same manner shall it 30  
be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

---

V. 21. *or*, is among you

LUKE.

- 31 In that day, he who shall be on the housetop, and  
his goods in the house, let him not come down to  
take them away ; and he that is in the field, let him  
32 likewise not turn back. Remember Lot's wife.  
33 Whoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it ; and  
whoever may lose his life shall preserve it.  
34 I say to you, in that night there shall be two men  
in one bed ; one shall be taken, and the other shall  
35 be left. Two women shall be grinding together ;  
37 one shall be taken, and the other left. And they  
answering say to him, Where, Lord? And he  
said to them, Where the body is, there also will the  
eagles be gathered together.

- 1 XVIII. AND he spake also a parable to them, to  
the end that they ought always to pray, and not to  
2 faint ; saying : There was in a certain city a cer-  
tain judge, who feared not God, nor regarded man.  
3 And there was a widow in that city ; and she came  
4 to him, saying, Avengè me of mine adversary. And  
he would not for a while ; but afterward he said  
within himself : Though I fear not God, nor regard  
5 man, yet because this widow troubles me, I will  
avenge her, lest continually coming she weary me.  
6 And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge  
7 says. And shall not God avenge his chosen, who  
cry to him day and night, though he is long suffer-

---

V. 36 belongs in Matt. 24 : 40 ; it is omitted here in the  
oldest copies.

CHAPTER XVIII.

ing in respect to them? I say to you, that he will 8  
avenge them speedily. But yet, when the Son of  
man comes, will he find faith on the earth?

And he spake this parable to some who trusted 9  
in themselves that they were righteous, and despised  
others. Two men went up into the temple to pray; 10  
one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. The 11  
Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself: God,  
I thank thee, that I am not as other men, extortion-  
ers, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I 12  
fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I  
possess. And the publican, standing afar off, would 13  
not even lift up his eyes to heaven, but smote upon  
his breast, saying: God be merciful to me, the sin-  
ner. I say to you, this man went down to his house 14  
justified rather than the other. For every one that  
exalts himself shall be humbled; and he that hum-  
bles himself shall be exalted.

And they brought to him also infants, that he might 15  
touch them; and the disciples seeing it rebuked them.  
But Jesus calling them to him, said: Suffer the 16  
little children to come to me, and forbid them not;  
for to such belongs the kingdom of God. Verily I 17  
say to you, whoever shall not receive the kingdom  
of God as a little child shall not enter therein.

And a certain ruler asked him, saying: Good 18  
Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

---

V. 12. *or*, of all that I gain

LUKE.

- 19 And Jesus said to him: Why dost thou call me  
20 good? None is good save one, God. Thou knowest  
the commandments: Do not commit adultery, Do  
not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness,  
21 Honor thy father and thy mother. And he said,  
22 All these have I kept from my youth. And Jesus  
hearing it said to him: Yet lackest thou one thing;  
sell all that thou hast, and distribute to the poor,  
and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come,  
23 follow me. And when he heard this, he became  
24 very sorrowful; for he was exceedingly rich. And  
Jesus seeing him become very sorrowful, said: How  
hardly shall they that have riches enter into the  
25 kingdom of God! For it is easier for a camel to  
go through a needle's-eye, than for a rich man to  
26 enter into the kingdom of God. And they that  
27 heard it said: And who can be saved? And he  
said: The things that are impossible with men are  
possible with God.
- 28 And Peter said: Lo, we have left all, and follow-  
29 ed thee. And he said to them: Verily I say to  
you, there is no one that has left house, or parents,  
or brothers, or wife, or children, for the sake of the  
30 kingdom of God, who shall not receive manifold  
more in this present time, and in the world to come  
life everlasting.
- 31 And taking with him the twelve, he said to them:  
Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and all the  
things written by the prophets for the Son of man

## CHAPTER XIX.

shall be accomplished. For he shall be delivered 32  
to the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and insulted,  
and spit upon ; and they shall scourge him, and put 33  
him to death ; and on the third day he shall rise  
again. And they understood none of these things ; 34  
and this saying was hidden from them, and they  
knew not the things that were said.

And it came to pass, that as he came near to 35  
Jericho, a certain blind man was sitting by the  
way side begging. And hearing a multitude pass- 36  
ing by, he asked what this was. And they told 37  
him, that Jesus of Nazareth is passing by. And 38  
he called aloud, saying : Jesus, Son of David, have  
mercy on me. And they who went before rebuked 39  
him, that he should hold his peace. But he cried  
much the more, Son of David, have mercy on me.  
And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be 40  
brought to him. And when he was come near, he  
asked him, saying : What wilt thou that I shall do 41  
to thee ? And he said : Lord, that I may receive  
sight. And Jesus said to him : Receive sight ; thy 42  
faith has made thee whole. And immediately he 43  
received sight, and followed him, glorifying God.  
And all the people, seeing it, gave praise to God :

XIX. AND having entered in, he was passing 1  
through Jericho. And behold, there was a man named 2  
Zaccheus, and he was a chief publican ; and this man  
was rich. And he sought to see Jesus, who he was ; 3



## LUKE.

- and he could not on account of the multitude, be-  
4 cause he was small in stature. And running be-  
fore, he climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him ;  
5 because by that way he was to pass through. And  
Jesus, when he came to the place, looked up and saw  
him, and said to him : Zaccheus, make haste and  
come down ; for to-day I must abide at thy house.  
6 And he made haste, and came down, and received  
7 him joyfully. And seeing it, they all murmured,  
saying that he had gone in to be a guest with a  
sinner.
- 8 And Zaccheus stood up, and said to the Lord :  
Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the  
poor ; and whatever I have taken from any one by  
9 false accusation, I restore fourfold. And Jesus said  
to him : This day is salvation come to this house,  
10 inasmuch as he also is a son of Abraham. For  
the Son of man came to seek and to save that which  
was lost.
- 11 And as they heard these things, he added and  
spoke a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem,  
and because they thought that the kingdom of God  
12 would immediately appear. He said therefore : A  
certain nobleman went into a far country to receive  
13 for himself a kingdom, and to return. And having  
called his ten servants, he gave them ten pounds,  
and said to them, Traffic till I come.
- 14 But his citizens hated him, and sent an embassy

## CHAPTER XIX.

after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us.

And it came to pass, when he had returned, having received the kingdom, that he commanded these servants to be called to him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know what each had gained by trading. Then came the first, saying : Lord, thy pound has gained ten pounds. And he said to him : Well done, good servant ; because thou wast faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.

And the second came, saying : Lord, thy pound has made five pounds. And he said also to this man : And be thou over five cities. And another came, saying : Lord, behold thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin. For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man ; thou takest up what thou layedst not down, and reapest what thou didst not sow. And he says to him : Out of thy mouth will I judge thee, wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up what I laid not down, and reaping what I did not sow ? Why then didst thou not put my money into the bank ? and I, at my coming, should have required it with interest. And he said to those standing by : Take from him the pound, and give it to him that has ten pounds. And they said to him : Lord, he has ten pounds. For I say to you, that to every one

LUKE.

that hath shall be given ; and from him that hath not, even what he hath shall be taken away.

27 But those my enemies, who would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

28 And when he had spoken these things, he went  
29 before, going up to Jerusalem. And it came to pass, as he drew near to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called Olivet, that he sent two of his disciples, saying : Go into the opposite village, in which as ye are entering ye shall find a colt tied, whereon  
30 no man ever sat ; loose and bring him. And if any one ask you, why do ye loose him ? thus shall ye say  
31 to him, Because the Lord has need of him. And they that were sent forth departed, and found even  
32 as he had said to them. And as they were loosing the colt, its owners said to them, Why loose ye the  
33 colt ? And they said, The Lord has need of him.  
34 And they brought him to Jesus ; and having cast their garments upon the colt, they set Jesus thereon.  
35 And as he went, they spread their garments in the  
36 way. And as he was drawing near, just at the descent of the mount of the Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice, and praise God with a loud voice for all the miracles which they had  
37 seen ; saying : Blessed be the King that comes in the name of the Lord ! Peace in heaven, and glory in the highest !

39 And some of the Pharisees from the multitude

## CHAPTER XX.

said to him : Teacher, rebuke thy disciples. And 40  
he answered and said to them : I tell you that if these  
shall hold their peace, the stones will cry out.

And when he was come near, as he saw the city, 41  
he wept over it, saying : If even thou hadst known, 42  
at least in this thy day, the things that belong to  
thy peace ! But now they are hidden from thine  
eyes. For days shall come upon thee, that thine 43  
enemies will cast up a mound about thee, and com-  
pass thee round, and shut thee in on every side, and 44  
will level thee with the ground, and thy children  
within thee, and will not leave in thee one stone up-  
on another ; because thou knewest not the time of  
thy visitation.

And entering into the temple, he began to cast 45  
out those that sold ; saying to them : It is written, 46  
And my house shall be a house of prayer ; but ye  
have made it a den of robbers.

And he was teaching daily in the temple ; and the 47  
chief priests and the scribes and the chief of the  
people were seeking to destroy him, and could not 48  
find what they might do ; for all the people were  
very attentive to hear him.

XX. AND it came to pass, that on one of the 1  
days, as he taught the people in the temple, and  
published the good news, the chief priests and the  
scribes came to him with the elders, and spake to 2

---

V. 48. *Gr.* hang, listening, upon him.

LUKE.

him, saying : Tell us, by what authority doest thou these things ? Or who is he that gave thee this authority ? And he answering said to them : I also will ask you one thing ; and tell it me. John's immersion, was it from heaven, or from men ? And they reasoned with themselves, saying : If we say, From heaven, he will say, Why then did ye not believe him ? But if we say, From men, all the people will stone us ; for they are persuaded that John was a prophet. And they answered, that they knew not whence it was. And Jesus said to them : Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

9 And he began to speak to the people this parable : A man planted a vineyard, and let it out to husbandmen, and went abroad for a long time. And at the season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard ; but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty. And again he sent another servant ; and him also, having beaten and treated him shamefully, they sent away empty. And again he sent a third ; and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13 And the lord of the vineyard said : What shall I do ? I will send my beloved son ; perhaps, seeing him, they will reverence him. But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying : This is the heir ; come, let us kill him, that

## CHAPTER XX.

the inheritance may become ours. So they cast him 15  
 out of the vineyard, and killed him. What there-  
 fore will the lord of the vineyard do to them? He 16  
 will come and destroy these husbandmen, and will  
 give the vineyard to others. And when they heard  
 it, they said, God forbid! And he, looking on them, 17  
 said: What then is this that is written, The stone  
 which the builders disallowed, the same is become  
 the head of the corner? Every one that falls upon 18  
 that stone shall be broken; but on whomsoever it  
 shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

And the scribes and the chief priests sought to 19  
 lay hands on him in that hour; and they feared the  
 people; for they knew that he spake this parable  
 against them.

And watching him, they sent forth spies, feigning 20  
 themselves to be just men, that they might take hold  
 of his words, in order to deliver him up to the power,  
 and to the authority of the governor. And they 21  
 asked him, saying: Teacher, we know that thou  
 sayest and teachest rightly, and regardest not the  
 person of any, but teachest the way of God truly.  
 Is it lawful that we should give tribute to Cæsar, 22  
 or not? And perceiving their craftiness, he said to 23  
 them, Shew me a denáry. Whose image and in- 24  
 scription has it? They answered and said, Cæsar's.

V. 20. *or*, And having kept watch,

V. 24. Denáry, a Roman coin.

LUKE.

25 And he said to them : Render therefore to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and to God the things  
26 that are God's. And they could not take hold of his words before the people ; and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

27 Then came to him some of the Sadducees, who deny that there is a resurrection ; and they asked  
28 him, saying : Teacher, Moses wrote to us, If a man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed to his brother.

29 There were therefore seven brothers ; and the first  
30 took a wife, and died without children ; and the  
31 second and the third took her ; and in like manner  
32 also the seven left no children, and died. At last  
33 the woman also died. In the resurrection, therefore, of which of them is she wife ? For the seven had her for a wife.

34 And Jesus answering said to them : The sons of  
35 this world marry, and are given in marriage. But they who are accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry,  
36 nor are given in marriage ; for neither can they die any more ; for they are equal to the angels, and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection.

37 Now that the dead are raised, even Moses shewed, at The Bush, when he calls the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Ja-

## CHAPTER XXI.

Job. For he is not a God of the dead, but of the 38  
living ; for all live to him.

And some of the scribes answering said : Teacher, 39  
thou saidst well ; for they no longer dared to ask 40  
him any question.

And he said to them : How say they that the 41  
Christ is son of David ? And David himself says 42  
in the book of Psalms : The LORD said to my Lord,  
sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies 43  
thy footstool. David therefore calls him Lord, and 44  
how is he his son ?

And in the hearing of all the multitude, he said 45  
to his disciples : Beware of the scribes, who desire 46  
to go about in long robes, and love greetings in the  
markets, and the first seats in the synagogues, and  
the first places at feasts ; who devour widows' houses, 47  
and for a pretence make long prayers. These shall  
receive greater condemnation.

XXI. AND looking up, he saw the rich men cast- 1  
ing their gifts into the treasury. And he saw also 2  
a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites.  
And he said : Of a truth I say to you, that this poor 3  
widow cast in more than all. For all these, out of 4  
their abundance, cast into the offerings ; but she,  
out of her want, cast in all the living that she had.

And as some were saying of the temple, that it 5  
has been adorned with beautiful stones and offerings,



LUKE.

- 6 he said : As for these things which ye behold, days  
will come in which there shall not be left one stone  
7 upon another, that shall not be thrown down. And  
they asked him, saying : Teacher, when therefore  
will these things be, and what will be the sign when  
these things are about to come to pass ?
- 8 And he said : Take heed that ye be not led astray.  
For many shall come in my name, saying : I am he,  
9 and the time is at hand. Go not after them. And  
when ye shall hear of wars and commotions, be not  
terrified ; for these things must first come to pass ;  
but the end is not immediately.
- 0 Then said he to them : Nation shall rise against  
11 nation, and kingdom against kingdom ; and there  
shall be great earthquakes, and in divers places fam-  
ines and pestilences ; and there shall be great por-  
12 tents and signs from heaven. And before all these,  
they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you,  
delivering you up into synagogues and prisons, be-  
ing brought before kings and rulers for my name's  
13 sake. And it shall turn out to you for a testimony.
- 14 Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate  
15 before what ye shall answer. For I will give you a  
mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall  
16 not be able to gainsay or withstand. And ye shall  
be delivered up both by parents, and brothers, and  
kindred, and friends ; and some of you shall they  
17 cause to be put to death. And ye shall be hated by  
18 all for my name's sake. And there shall not a hair

## CHAPTER XXI.

of your head perish. In your patience possess your 19  
souls.

And when ye shall see Jerusalem encompassed 20  
by armies, then know that its desolation is at hand.  
Then let those in Judea flee into the mountains ; and 21  
let those in the midst of it depart out ; and let those  
in the fields not enter into it. Because these are 22  
the days of vengeance, that all the things which are  
written may be fulfilled.

Woe to them that are with child, and to them 23  
that give suck, in those days ! For there shall be  
great distress upon the land, and wrath to this  
people. And they shall fall by the edge of the 24  
sword, and shall be led away captive into all the na-  
tions ; and Jerusalem shall be trodden down by the  
Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles shall be  
fulfilled.

And there shall be signs in the sun, and moon, and 25  
stars ; and on the earth distress of nations, in perplexi-  
ty for the roaring of the sea and waves ; men's hearts 26  
failing them for fear, and for looking for those things  
that are coming on the world ; for the powers of  
heaven shall be shaken. And then shall they see 27  
the Son of man coming in a cloud, with power and  
great glory. And when these things begin to come 28  
to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads ; for  
your redemption is drawing nigh.

---

V. 19. *or, by your patience preserve*

LUKE.

29 And he spake to them a parable: Behold the fig  
30 tree, and all the trees. When they already shoot  
forth, seeing it ye know of yourselves that the sum-  
31 mer is already near. So also ye, when ye see these  
things coming to pass, know that the kingdom of  
32 God is near. Verily I say to you, this generation  
shall not pass away, till all shall have come to pass.  
33 Heaven and earth shall pass away; but my words  
shall not pass away.

34 And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your  
hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunken-  
ness, and cares of this life, and that day come upon  
35 you unawares. For as a snare shall it come on all  
36 that dwell on the face of the whole earth. And  
watch, in every time praying that ye may be ac-  
counted worthy to escape all these things that shall  
come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

37 And in the daytime he was teaching in the temple;  
and at night he went out, and abode in the mount  
38 that is called Olivet. And all the people came  
early in the morning to him in the temple, to hear  
him.

1 XXII. Now the feast of unleavened bread was  
2 drawing near, which is called the Passover; and  
the chief priests and the scribes were seeking how  
they might kill him; for they feared the people.

3 And Satan entered into Judas called Iscariot,  
4 being of the number of the twelve. And he went

## CHAPTER XXII.

away, and consulted with the chief priests and captains, how he might deliver him up to them. And 5  
they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.  
And he promised, and sought opportunity to deliver 6  
him up to them in the absence of the multitude.

And the day of unleavened bread came, when 7  
the passover must be killed. And he sent away 8  
Peter and John, saying: Go, and prepare us the  
passover, that we may eat it. And they said to 9  
him, Where wilt thou that we prepare? And he 10  
said to them: Behold, when ye have entered into  
the city, there shall meet you a man bearing a  
pitcher of water; follow him into the house where  
he enters in. And ye shall say to the master of 11  
the house: The Teacher says to thee, Where is the  
guestchamber, where I may eat the passover with  
my disciples? And he will shew you a large up- 12  
per room furnished; there make ready. And they 13  
went away, and found as he had said to them. And  
they made ready the passover.

And when the hour came, he reclined at table, 14  
and the apostles with him. And he said to them: 15  
I have earnestly desired to eat this passover with  
you before I suffer. For I say to you, I shall eat 16  
of it no more, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of  
God. And having received a cup, he gave thanks 17  
and said: Take this, and divide it among yourselves.  
For I say to you, I will not drink of the fruit of 18  
the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

LUKE.

19 And having taken bread, he gave thanks, and brake it, and gave to them, saying : This is my body which is given for you ; this do in remembrance of me. And the cup in like manner after supper, saying : This cup is the new covenant in my blood, which is shed for you.

21 But, behold, the hand of him that betrays me is with me on the table. For the son of man indeed goes, as it was determined ; but woe to that man by whom he is betrayed ! And they began to inquire among themselves, who then it might be that should do this thing ?

24 And there arose also a contention among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest. And he said to them : The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them ; and they that exercise authority over them are called benefactors. But ye are not so ; but let the greatest among you become as the younger, and he that is chief as he that serves. For which is greater, he that reclines at table, or he that serves ? Is not he that reclines at table ? But I am in the midst of you as he that serves. Ye are they who have continued with me in my temptations ; and I appoint to you a kingdom, as my Father appointed to me, that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom ; and ye shall sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

31 And the Lord said : Simon, Simon, behold, Satan

CHAPTER XXII.

has desired you, to sift you as the wheat. But I 32  
have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not ; and thou,  
when thou hast turned, strengthen thy brethren.

And he said to him : Lord, I am ready to go with 33  
thee, both to prison and to death. And he said : 34  
I say to thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this  
day, till thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

And he said to them : When I sent you without 35  
purse, and bag, and sandals, lacked ye anything?  
And they said, Nothing. Therefore said he to 36  
them : but now, he that has a purse let him take it,  
and likewise a bag ; and he that has none, let him  
sell his garment and buy a sword. For I say to you, 37  
that yet this which is written must be accomplished  
in me, And he was reckoned among transgressors ;  
for the things concerning me have an end.

And they said : Lord, behold, here are two swords. 38  
And he said to them, It is enough !

And going out, he went as he was wont to the 39  
mount of the Olives ; and his disciples also followed  
him. And when he was at the place, he said to 40  
them : Pray that ye enter not into temptation. And 41  
he withdrew from them about a stone's throw ; and  
kneeling down, he prayed, saying : Father, if thou 42  
art willing to remove this cup from me ! Yet, not  
my will but thine be done.

And there appeared to him an angel from heaven, 43

---

V. 37. *or, are having an end*

## LUKE.

44 strengthening him. And being in an agony he  
prayed more earnestly; and his sweat became as it  
were great drops of blood falling down to the  
45 ground. And rising up from prayer, and coming  
to the disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow.  
46 And he said to them: Why sleep ye? Arise and  
pray, that ye enter not into temptation.

47 While he was yet speaking, behold a multitude,  
and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve,  
went before them and drew near to Jesus to kiss  
48 him. But Jesus said to him: Judas, betrayest thou  
49 the Son of man with a kiss? And they who were  
about him, seeing what would follow, said to him:  
50 Lord, shall we smite with the sword? And a cer-  
tain one of them smote the servant of the high  
51 priest, and took off his right ear. And Jesus an-  
swered and said, Suffer thus far. And he touched  
his ear, and healed him.

52 And Jesus said to the chief priests and cap-  
tains of the temple and elders, who were come to  
him: Have ye come out as against a robber, with  
53 swords and staves? When I was daily with you  
in the temple, ye stretched not forth your hands  
against me. But this is your hour and the power  
of darkness.

54 And they took him, and led him away, and  
brought him into the house of the high priest. And  
Peter followed afar off.

55 And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of

## CHAPTER XXII.

the court, and had sat down together, Peter sat down among them. And a certain maid seeing 56 him as he sat by the fire, and looking intently upon him, said : This man also was with him. And he 57 denied him, saying : Woman, I know him not.

And after a little while another seeing him said : 58 Thou also art of them. And Peter said : Man, I am not.

And about the space of one hour after, another 59 confidently affirmed, saying : Of a truth this one also was with him ; for he is a Galilean. And 60 Peter said : Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately, while he was yet speaking, the cock crowed.

And the Lord turning looked upon Peter. And 61 Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he said to him : Before the cock crow this day, thou shalt deny me thrice. And Peter went out, and 62 wept bitterly.

And the men that held Jesus mocked him, beat- 63 ing him ; and having blindfolded him they asked him, 64 saying : Prophecy, who is it that smote thee ? And 65 many other things said they, reviling him.

And when it was day, the elders of the people, 66 and the chief priests and scribes, came together ; and they brought him up into their council, saying : If 67 thou art the Christ, tell us. And he said to them :

---

V. 66. *Gr.* the eldership of the people



LUKE.

68 If I tell you, ye will not believe. And if I ask, ye  
69 will not answer. But henceforth shall the Son of  
man sit on the right hand of the power of God.  
70 And they all said : Art thou then the Son of God ?  
71 And he said to them, Ye say it ; for I am. And  
they said, Why need we any further witness. For  
we ourselves have heard it from his own mouth.

1 XXIII. AND the whole multitude of them arose,  
2 and led him unto Pilate. And they began to ac-  
cuse him, saying : We found this man perverting  
our nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar,  
3 saying that he himself is Christ, a king. And  
Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the  
Jews? And he answering said to him, Thou say-  
4 est it. And Pilate said to the chief priests and the  
5 multitudes, I find no fault in this man. And they  
were the more violent, saying : He stirs up the  
people, teaching throughout all Judea, beginning  
from Galilee, unto this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked if the man  
7 is a Galilean. And learning that he belonged to  
Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him up to Herod, who  
also was himself in Jerusalem at that time.

8 And Herod, when he saw Jesus, rejoiced greatly ;  
for he had desired for a long time to see him, be-  
cause he had heard concerning him ; and he hoped  
9 to see some sign wrought by him. And he ques-  
tioned him in many words ; but he answered him

## CHAPTER XXIII.

nothing. And the chief priests and scribes stood, 10  
vehemently accusing him. And Herod with his 11  
men of war set him at nought, and mocked him, and  
arraying him in a gorgeous robe sent him back to  
Pilate. And Pilate and Herod on that day became 12  
friends with each other; for before they were at  
enmity between themselves.

And Pilate, having called together the chief 13  
priests and the rulers and the people, said to them : 14  
Ye brought to me this man, as one perverting  
the people; and, behold, I, having examined him  
before you, found no fault in this man, touching  
those things whereof ye accuse him. No, nor yet 15  
Herod; for I sent you up to him; and behold,  
nothing worthy of death has been done by him. I 16  
will therefore chastise, and release him. And they 18  
cried out all at once, saying : Away with this man,  
and release to us Barabbas ! (Who for a certain se- 19  
dition made in the city, and for murder, was cast into  
prison).

Again, therefore, Pilate spake to them, desiring 20  
to release Jesus. But they cried, saying : Crucify, 21  
crucify him. And a third time he said to them, 22  
What evil then has this man done? I have found  
no cause of death in him. I will therefore chastise,  
and release him. And they were urgent with loud 23  
voices, requiring that he should be crucified. And

---

V. 17 is omitted in all the oldest and best copies.

LUKE.

- their voices and those of the chief priests prevailed.
- 24 And Pilate gave sentence that it should be done as  
25 they required. And he released him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they required ; and Jesus he delivered up to their will.
- 26 And as they led him away, they laid hold of one Simon a Cyrenian, coming from the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear it  
27 after Jesus. And there followed him a great company of the people, and of women who also bewailed  
28 and lamented him. But Jesus turning to them said : Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep  
29 for yourselves, and for your children. For, behold, days are coming in which they shall say : Happy the barren, and wombs that never bare, and breasts that  
30 never gave suck. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us ; and to the hills, Cover  
31 us. For if they do these things in the green tree, what shall be done in the dry ?
- 32 And there were also two others, malefactors, led  
33 with him to be put to death. And when they had gone away to the place which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on  
34 the right hand, and the other on the left. And Jesus said : Father, forgive them ; for they know not what they do. And they divided his garments, casting lots.

---

V. 33. *Gr.* which is called Skull

## CHAPTER XXIII.

And the people stood beholding. And the rulers 35  
also scoffed, saying : He saved others ; let him save  
himself, if he is the Christ, the chosen of God. And 36  
the soldiers also coming to him mocked him, offering  
him vinegar ; and saying, If thou art the King of 37  
the Jews, save thyself.

And there was an inscription written over him : 38  
THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

And one of the malefactors who were hanged 39  
railed at him, saying : If thou art the Christ, save  
thyself and us. \*But the other answering rebuked 40  
him, saying : Dost thou not even fear God, seeing thou  
art in the same condemnation? And we indeed 41  
justly ; for we are receiving the due reward of our  
deeds ; but this man has done nothing amiss. And 42  
he said to Jesus : Remember me, when thou comest  
in thy kingdom. And Jesus said to him : Verily 43  
I say to thee, to-day shalt thou be with me in  
paradise.

And it was about the sixth hour ; and darkness 44  
came over the whole land until the ninth hour. And  
the sun was darkened ; and the vail of the temple 45  
was rent in the midst. And Jesus, crying with a 46  
loud voice, said : Father, into thy hands I commit  
my spirit. And having said this, he expired.

And the centurion, seeing what was done, glori- 47  
fied God, saying : Verily, this man was righteous !  
And all the multitudes who had come together to 48  
that sight, having beheld the things that were

LUKE.

49 done, smote their breasts and returned. And all his acquaintance were standing afar off, and women who had followed him from Galilee, beholding these things.

50 And, behold, a man named Joseph, a counselor,  
51 a good and just man, (he had not consented to their counsel and deed), from Arimathea a city of the Jews, who was waiting for the kingdom of God ;  
52 this man went to Pilate, and asked for the body of  
53 Jesus. And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewn in  
54 the rock, where no one was yet laid. And it was the day of preparation, and the sabbath drew on.  
55 And the women also, who had come with him out of Galilee, followed after, and viewed the sepulchre,  
56 and how his body was laid. And returning, they prepared spices and ointments ; and on the sabbath they rested according to the commandment.

1 XXIV. Now on the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came to the sepulchre,  
2 bringing the spices which they had prepared. And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.  
3 And entering in, they found not the body of the  
4 Lord Jesus. And it came to pass, that as they were much perplexed concerning this, behold, two  
5 men stood by them in shining garments. And they being afraid and bowing their faces to the earth, they said to them : Why seek ye the living among

## CHAPTER XXIV.

the dead? He is not here, but is risen. Remember 6  
how he spake to you when he was yet in Galilee,  
saying : The Son of man must be delivered into the 7  
hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and on the  
third day rise again. And they remembered his 8  
words.

And returning from the sepulchre, they reported 9  
all these things to the eleven, and to all the rest.  
And it was Mary the Magdalene, and Joanna, and 10  
Mary the mother of James, and the other women  
with them, who said these things to the apostles.  
And their words seemed to them as idle talk, and 11  
they believed them not.

But Peter rose up, and ran to the sepulchre ; and 12  
stooping down, he beholds the linen cloths lying by  
themselves ; and he departed to his home, wondering  
at that which was come to pass.

And, behold, two of them were going on that 13  
same day to a village called Emmaus, distant sixty  
furlongs from Jerusalem. And they were convers- 14  
ing together concerning all these things that had  
taken place. And it came to pass, that while they 15  
were conversing and reasoning, Jesus himself drew  
near, and went with them. But their eyes were 16  
holden that they should not know him.

And he said to them : What communications are 17  
these, that ye have one with another, as ye walk,  
and are sad? And one, whose name was Cleopas, 18  
answering said to him : Dost thou alone sojourn in

LUKE.

Jerusalem and not know the things that have come  
19 to pass there in these days? And he said to them,  
What things? And they said to him : The things  
concerning Jesus of Nazareth, who was a prophet  
mighty in deed and word before God and all the  
20 people ; and how the chief priests and our rulers  
delivered him up to be condemned to death, and  
21 crucified him. But we were hoping that it was he  
who was to redeem Israel. But indeed, beside all  
this, to day is the third day since these things were  
22 done. Yea, and certain women also of our company  
made us astonished, who were early at the sepulchre ;  
23 and not finding his body, came saying, that they  
had also seen a vision of angels, who say that he is  
24 alive. And some of those who were with us went  
away to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the  
women had said ; but him they saw not.  
25 Then he said to them : O foolish, and slow of  
heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken !  
26 Was it not necessary, that the Christ should suffer  
27 these things, and enter into his glory? And begin-  
ning from Moses, and all the prophets, he explained  
to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning  
himself.  
28 And they drew near to the village, whither they  
were going ; and he made as though he would go  
29 further. But they constrained him, saying : Abide  
with us ; for it is toward evening, and the day is  
far spent. And he went in to abide with them.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

And it came to pass, that as he was reclining at 30  
table with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and  
breaking, gave to them. And their eyes were 31  
opened, and they knew him ; and he vanished out of  
their sight. And they said one to another : Did not 32  
our heart burn within us, while he talked to us in  
the way, and while he opened to us the Scriptures?

And rising up in the same hour, they returned to 33  
Jerusalem, and found the eleven and those who were  
with them gathered together ; saying : The Lord 34  
is risen indeed, and has appeared to Simon. And 35  
they related what things were done in the way, and  
how he was known by them in the breaking of  
bread.

And while they were speaking these things, he 36  
himself stood in the midst of them, and says to  
them : Peace be to you. But they were terrified 37  
and affrighted, and supposed that they beheld a  
spirit. And he said to them : Why are ye troubled? 38  
And wherefore do thoughts arise in your hearts?  
See my hands and my feet, that it is I myself. 39  
Handle me, and see ; for a spirit has not flesh and  
bones, as ye see me have. And having said this, 40  
he shewed them his hands and his feet. And while 41  
they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said  
to them, Have ye here anything to eat? And 42  
they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of a  
honeycomb. And he took, and ate it before them. 43

And he said to them : These are my words which 44



LUKE.

I spake to you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which are written in the law of Moses, and the prophets, and psalms, concerning me. Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures.

45  
46 And he said to them : Thus it is written, that the Christ should suffer, and should rise from the dead  
47 on the third day ; and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among  
48 all the nations, beginning at Jerusalem. Ye are witnesses of these things.

49 And, behold, I send forth the promise of my Father upon you. But do ye tarry in the city, until ye are endued with power from on high.

50 And he led them out as far as to Bethany ; and  
51 lifting up his hands, he blessed them. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, that he parted from  
52 them, and was borne up into heaven. And they, having worshiped him, returned to Jerusalem with  
53 great joy ; and were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God.

# THE GOSPEL

ACCORDING TO

## J O H N.

---

### CHAPTER I.

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word 1  
was with God, and the Word was God. The same 2  
was in the beginning with God. All things were 3  
made by him; and without him was nothing made  
that has been made. In him was life; and the life 4  
was the light of men. And the light shines in the 5  
darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

There was a man sent from God, whose name 6  
was John. The same came for a witness, to bear 7  
witness of the light, that through him all might be- 8  
lieve. He was not the light; but [came] to bear wit- 9  
ness of the light. There was the true light, which 10  
lights every man that comes into the world. He was 11  
in the world, and the world was made by him, and the  
world knew him not. He came to his own, and his 12  
own received him not. But as many as received  
him, to them gave he power to become children of

---

V. 3. *or, were made through him*

JOHN.

13 God, to them that believe on his name ; who were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14 And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us ; and we beheld his glory, a glory as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth.

15 John bare witness of him ; and cried, saying : This was he of whom I said, He that comes after me is preferred before me, because he was before me. Because out of his fullness we all received, and grace for grace. For the law was given through Moses ; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ. No one has seen God at any time ; the only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, he declared him.

19 And this is the witness of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art thou ? And he confessed, and denied not ; and he confessed, I am not the Christ. And they asked him, What then ? Art thou Elijah ? And he says, I am not. Art thou the Prophet ? And he answered, No. They said therefore to him : Who art thou ? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself ? He said : I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness,

---

V. 14. *Gr.* tabernacled among us

V. 15. *Gr.* is become before me ; because he was prior to me.

## CHAPTER I.

Make straight the way of the Lord, as said Isaiah the prophet.

And they that were sent were of the Pharisees. 24  
And they asked him, and said to him : Why then 25  
dost thou immerse, if thou art not the Christ, nor  
Elijah, nor the Prophet? John answered them, 26  
saying : I immerse in water. There stands one  
in the midst of you, whom ye know not ; he that 27  
comes after me, the latchet of whose sandal I am  
not worthy to unloose.

These things took place in Bethany beyond the 28  
Jordan, where John was immersing.

On the morrow, he sees Jesus coming to him, and 29  
says : Behold the Lamb of God, that takes away the  
sin of the world ! This is he of whom I said : After 30  
me comes a man who is preferred before me ; be-  
cause he was before me. And I knew him not ; but 31  
that he might be made manifest to Israel, for this I  
came immersing in water.

And John bare witness, saying : I have seen the 32  
Spirit descending as a dove out of heaven, and it  
abode upon him. And I knew him not ; but he that 33  
sent me to immerse in water, the same said to me :  
Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending,  
and abiding on him, the same is he that immerses in  
the Holy Spirit. And I have seen, and have borne 34  
witness, that this is the Son of God.

## JOHN.

35 Again, on the morrow, John was standing and  
36 two of his disciples ; and looking upon Jesus as he  
37 walked, he says : Behold the Lamb of God ! And  
the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed  
38 Jesus. And Jesus turning, and beholding them fol-  
lowing, says to them : What seek ye ? They said  
to him : Rabbi, (which interpreted means, Teacher)  
39 where dost thou abide ? He says to them : Come,  
and ye shall see. They came and saw where he  
abode ; and they abode with him that day. It was  
about the tenth hour.

40 Andrew, the brother of Simon Peter, was one of  
the two who heard it from John, and followed him.  
41 He first finds his brother Simon, and says to him :  
We have found the Messiah, which is interpreted,  
42 Christ. And he brought him to Jesus. Jesus, be-  
holding him, said : Thou art Simon the son of Jo-  
nah ; thou shalt be called Cephas, which is inter-  
preted, Peter [Rock].

43 On the morrow he would go forth into Galilee.  
And he finds Philip ; and Jesus says to him : Fol-  
44 low me. Now Philip was from Bethsaida, of the  
45 city of Andrew and Peter. Philip finds Nathanael,  
and says to him : We have found him of whom  
Moses, in the law, and the prophets wrote, Jesus the  
46 son of Joseph, who is from Nazareth. And Na-  
thanael said to him, Can any good thing come out  
of Nazareth ? Philip says to him, Come and see.  
47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and says of

## CHAPTER II.

him : Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no  
guile ! Nathanael says to him, Whence knowest 48  
thou me ? Jesus answered and said to him : Before  
Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig  
tree, I saw thee. Nathanael answered : Rabbi, thou 49  
art the Son of God, thou art the King of Israel.  
Jesus answered and said to him : Because I said to 50  
thee, I saw thee under the fig tree, believest thou ?  
Thou shalt see greater things than these. And he 51  
says to him : Verily, verily, I say to you, henceforth  
ye shall see heaven opened, and the angels of God  
ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

II. AND on the third day there was a marriage 1  
in Cana of Galilee ; and the mother of Jesus was  
there. And Jesus also was bidden, and his disci- 2  
ples, to the marriage. And wine having failed, the 3  
mother of Jesus says to him, They have no wine.  
Jesus says to her : Woman, what have I to do with 4  
thee ? My hour is not yet come. His mother says 5  
to the servants : Whatever he says to you, do it.  
Now there were set there six waterpots of stone, 6  
after the Jewish custom of purifying, containing  
two or three firkins apiece. Jesus says to them : 7  
Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled  
them up to the brim. And he says to them : Draw 8

---

V. 51. *Some ancient Mss. omit henceforth.*

V. 6. *Firkin : holding nine gallons.*

## JOHN.

- out now, and bear to the ruler of the feast. And  
9 they bare it. When the ruler of the feast tasted  
the water that was made wine (and he knew not  
whence it was, but the servants who had drawn the  
water knew,) the ruler of the feast called the bride-  
10 groom, and says to him : Every man sets forth the  
good wine first ; and when they have drunk freely,  
then that which is worse. Thou hast kept the good  
11 wine until now. This beginning of the signs Jesus  
wrought in Cana of Galilee, and manifested his  
glory ; and his disciples believed on him.
- 12 After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and  
his mother, and his brothers, and his disciples ; and  
they abode there not many days.
- 13 And the passover of the Jews was at hand ; and  
14 Jesus went up to Jerusalem. And he found in the  
temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves,  
15 and the money-changers sitting. And having made  
a scourge of small cords, he drove all out of the  
temple, both the sheep and the oxen ; and poured  
out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables ;  
16 and to them that sold doves he said : Take these  
things hence ; make not my Father's house a house  
17 of merchandise. And his disciples remembered that  
it is written : Zeal for thy house consumes me.
- 18 The Jews therefore answered and said to him :  
What sign dost thou show to us, seeing that thou  
19 doest these things? Jesus answered and said to  
them : Destroy this temple, and in three days I will

### CHAPTER III.

raise it up. Therefore said the Jews: Forty and 20  
six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou  
raise it up in three days? But he spake of the 21  
temple of his body. When therefore he was risen 22  
from the dead, his disciples remembered that he said  
this; and they believed the Scripture, and the word  
which Jesus spake.

Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, 23  
on the feast-day, many believed on his name, behold-  
ing his signs which he wrought. But Jesus did not 24  
trust himself to them, because he knew all men,  
and had no need that any one should testify of 25  
man; for he himself knew what was in man.

III. THERE was a man of the Pharisees, named 1  
Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews. The same came 2  
to him by night, and said to him: Rabbi, we know  
that thou hast come a teacher from God; for no  
one can do these signs that thou doest, except God  
be with him.

Jesus answered and said to him: Verily, verily, 3  
I say to thee, except a man be born again, he can  
not see the kingdom of God. Nicodemus says to 4  
him: How can a man be born when he is old?  
Can he enter the second time into his mother's  
womb, and be born?

Jesus answered: Verily, verily, I say to thee, except 5

---

V. 3. *or*, born from above



## JOHN.

a man be born of water and the Spirit, he can not  
6 enter into the kingdom of God. That which is  
born of the flesh is flesh ; and that which is born of  
7 the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said to thee,  
Ye must be born again.

8 The wind blows where it will, and thou hearest  
the sound thereof, but knowest not whence it comes,  
and whither it goes. , So is every one that is born  
of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said to him : How can  
10 these things be ? Jesus answered and said to him :  
Art thou the teacher of Israel, and knowest not  
11 these things ? Verily, verily, I say to thee, we  
speak that which we know, and testify that which  
we have seen ; and ye receive not our testimony.  
12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe  
not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you heavenly  
13 things ? And no one has ascended up into heaven,  
but he that came down out of heaven, the Son of  
14 man who is in heaven. And as Moses lifted up the  
serpent in the wilderness, so must the Son of man  
15 be lifted up ; that whosoever believes on him may  
16 have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he  
gave his only-begotten Son, that whosoever believes  
on him should not perish, but may have everlasting  
17 life. For God sent not his Son into the world to  
judge the world ; but that the world through him  
18 might be saved. He that believes on him is not  
judged ; but he that believes not has already been

### CHAPTER III.

judged, because he has not believed on the name of the only-begotten Son of God. And this is the 19 judgment, that light has come into the world, and men loved the darkness rather than the light ; for their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil 20 hates the light, and comes not to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that doeth the 21 truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

After these things came Jesus and his disciples 22 into the land of Judea ; and there he tarried with them, and immersed. And John also was im- 23 mersing in Ænon near to Salim, because there was much water there ; and they came, and were immersed. For John was not yet cast into prison. 24

There arose therefore a question, on the part of 25 John's disciples with a Jew, about purifying. And 26 they came to John and said to him : Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond the Jordan, to whom thou hast borne witness, behold, the same immerses, and all come to him.

John answered and said : A man can receive noth- 27 ing, except it be given him from heaven. Ye your- 28 selves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him. He that 29 has the bride is the bridegroom. But the friend of the bridegroom, who stands and hears him, rejoices greatly because of the bridegroom's voice. This my joy therefore is made full. He must increase, but 30

JOHN.

31 I must decrease. He that comes from above is  
above all; he that is from the earth is of the earth,  
and speaks of the earth; he that comes from heaven  
32 is above all. And what he has seen and heard, that  
33 he testifies; and his testimony no one receives. He  
that has received his testimony has set his seal that  
34 God is true. For he whom God sent speaks the  
words of God; for he gives not the Spirit by meas-  
35 ure. The Father loves the Son, and has given all  
36 things into his hand. He that believes on the Son  
has everlasting life; and he that believes not the  
Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides  
on him.

1 IV. WHEN therefore the Lord knew that the  
Pharisees had heard, that Jesus made and immersed  
2 more disciples than John (though Jesus himself im-  
3 mersed not, but his disciples;) he left Judea, and  
4 departed again into Galilee. And he must go  
5 through Samaria. He comes therefore to a city of  
Samaria, called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground  
6 that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. Now Jacob's  
well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with  
the journey, sat down thus on the well. It was  
about the sixth hour.

7 There comes a woman of Samaria to draw water.  
8 Jesus says to her, Give me to drink. For his dis-

---

V. 34. *In some ancient copies*, God gives not

V. 5. Sychar: also called Shechem

#### CHAPTER IV.

ciples had gone away into the city to buy food. The Samaritan woman therefore says to him : How 9 is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, being a Samaritan woman ? For the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. Jesus answered and 10 said to her : If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that says to thee, Give me to drink, thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water. The woman says to him : 11 Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep. From whence then hast thou the living water ? Art thou greater than our father Jacob, 12 who gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle ? Jesus answered 13 and said to her : Every one that drinks of this water shall thirst again. But whoever drinks of the 14 water that I shall give him shall never thirst ; but the water that I shall give him shall become in him a well of water, springing up into everlasting life. The woman says to him : Sir, give me this water, 15 that I may not thirst, nor come hither to draw.

Jesus says to her : Go, call thy husband, and 16 come hither. The woman answered and said : I 17 have no husband. Jesus says to her : Thou saidest well, I have no husband. For thou hast had five 18 husbands ; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband. That thou hast spoken truly.

The woman says to him : Sir, I perceive that thou 19 art a prophet. Our fathers worshiped in this moun- 20

JOHN.

- tain ; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place  
21 where men ought to worship. Jesus says to her :  
Woman, believe me, an hour is coming, when ye  
shall neither in this mountain nor in Jerusalem wor-  
22 ship the Father. Ye worship that which ye know  
not ; we worship that which we know ; because salva-  
23 tion is of the Jews. But an hour is coming, and  
now is, when the true worshipers shall worship the  
Father in spirit and in truth ; for such the Father  
24 seeks to worship him. God is spirit ; and they that  
worship him must worship in spirit and in truth.  
25 The woman says to him : I know that Messiah  
comes (who is called Christ) ; when he is come, he  
26 will tell us all things. Jesus says to her : I that  
speak to thee am he.  
27 And upon this came his disciples ; and they mar-  
velled that he talked with the woman. Yet no one  
said, What seekest thou ? or, Why talkest thou with  
her ?  
28 The woman then left her waterpot, and went away  
29 into the city, and says to the men : Come, see a man  
who told me all things that ever I did. Is this the  
30 Christ ? Then they went out of the city, and came  
to him.  
31 In the meanwhile the disciples prayed him, say-  
32 ing : Master, eat. But he said to them, I have food  
33 to eat that ye know not of. Therefore said the disci-

---

V. 27. or, was talking with a woman.

#### CHAPTER IV.

ples one to another, Has any one brought him aught  
to eat? Jesus says to them: My food is to do the 34  
will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.  
Do ye not say, there are yet four months, and then 35  
comes the harvest? Behold, I say to you, lift up  
your eyes and look on the fields, that they are already  
white for harvest. And he that reaps receives wa- 36  
ges, and gathers fruit unto life eternal; that both he  
that sows and he that reaps may rejoice together.  
And herein is the true saying, One sows and an- 37  
other reaps. I sent you to reap that whereon ye 38  
have not labored. Other men have labored, and ye  
have entered into their labor.

And many of the Samaritans of that city believed 39  
on him for the saying of the woman, who testified,  
He told me all that ever I did. When therefore the 40  
Samaritans came to him, they besought him to tarry  
with them. And he tarried there two days. And 41  
far more believed because of his word. And they 42  
said to the woman: We no longer believe because of  
thy saying; for we ourselves have heard, and know  
that this is in truth the Savior of the world.

And after the two days he departed thence, and 43  
went into Galilee. For Jesus himself testified, that 44  
a prophet has no honor in his own country.

When therefore he came into Galilee, the Gali- 45  
leans received him, having seen all that he did in  
Jerusalem at the feast; for they also went to the feast.

## JOHN.

46 So he came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine.

And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was  
47 sick, in Capernaum. He, having heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, went to him, and besought him that he would come down and heal his son; for he was at the point of death.  
48 Then said Jesus to him: Except ye see signs and  
49 wonders, ye will not believe. The nobleman says to him: Sir, come down ere my child die. Jesus says to him: Go thy way; thy son lives. And the man believed the word that Jesus spake to him, and he  
51 went his way. And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and brought word saying, Thy  
52 child lives. Then inquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said to him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him. So the  
53 father knew that it was in the same hour, in which Jesus said to him, Thy son lives. And he himself  
54 believed, and his whole house. This second sign Jesus wrought, when he had come out of Judea into Galilee.

1 V. AFTER these things there was a feast of the  
2 Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. Now there is in Jerusalem by the sheep-gate a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five  
3 porches. In these lay a multitude of the infirm, of blind, lame, withered, [waiting for the moving of the

## CHAPTER V.

water. For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water. He therefore, who first went in after the troubling of the water, was made whole of whatever disease he had.] And a certain man was there, who had an infirmity thirty and eight years. When Jesus saw him lying, and knew that he had been now a long time thus, he says to him, Wilt thou be made whole? The infirm man answered him : Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool ; but while I am coming, another goes down before me. Jesus says to him : Rise, take up thy bed, and walk. And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed and walked.

And on that day was the sabbath. The Jews therefore said to him that was cured : It is the sabbath ; it is not lawful for thee to carry the bed. He answered them : He that made me whole, the same said to me, Take up thy bed and walk. They asked him therefore, Who is the man that said to thee, Take up thy bed and walk? And he that was healed knew not who it was ; for Jesus had conveyed himself away, there being a multitude in the place.

Afterward Jesus finds him in the temple. And he said to him : Behold, thou art made whole ; sin no

---

VV. 3, 4. *The words in brackets are wanting in the oldest and best copies.*



## JOHN.

- 15 more, lest something worse befall thee. The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus who  
16 had made him whole. And for this the Jews persecuted Jesus, because he did these things on the  
17 sabbath. But Jesus answered them : My Father  
18 works hitherto, and I work. For this therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only broke the sabbath, but also called God his Father, making himself equal with God.
- 19 Then answered Jesus and said to them : Verily, verily, I say to you, the Son can do nothing of himself, but what he sees the Father do ; for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son in  
20 like manner. For the Father loves the Son, and shews him all things that he himself doeth ; and greater works than these will he show him, that ye  
21 may marvel. For as the Father raises up the dead, and quickens them ; so also the Son quickens  
22 whom he will. For neither does the Father judge any one ; but all judgment he has committed to the  
23 Son ; that all may honor the Son, as they honor the Father. He that honors not the Son honors not the Father who sent him.
- 24 Verily, verily, I say to you : He that hears my word, and believes him that sent me, has everlasting life, and comes not into judgment, but has passed  
25 out of death into life. Verily, verily, I say to you : An hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God ; and they

## CHAPTER V.

that hear shall live. For as the Father has life in 26  
himself, so gave he also to the Son to have life in  
himself. And he gave him authority to execute 27  
judgment also, because he is the Son of man. Mar- 28  
vel not at this ; for an hour is coming, in which all  
that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and 29  
shall come forth ; they that have done good to the  
resurrection of life, and they that have done evil to  
the resurrection of judgment.

I can of myself do nothing. As I hear, I judge ; 30  
and my judgment is just ; because I seek not my  
own will, but the will of him that sent me.

If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not 31  
true. There is another that bears witness of me ; 32  
and I know that the witness which he witnesses of  
me is true. Ye have sent to John, and he has 33  
borne witness to the truth. But I receive the wit- 34  
ness not from man ; but these things I say, that ye  
might be saved. He was a burning and shining 35  
light ; and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in  
his light. But I have greater witness than that of 36  
John ; for the works which the Father gave me to  
finish, the works themselves that I do bear witness  
of me, that the Father has sent me. And the 37  
Father himself, who sent me, has borne witness of  
me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time,  
nor seen his shape. And ye have not his word 38

---

V. 27. *Gr.* is a son of man

w\*

269

JOHN.

abiding in you ; for whom he sent, him ye believe not.

39 Search the Scriptures ; because in them ye think  
ye have eternal life, and these are they that testify  
40 of me ; and ye will not come to me, that ye may  
41 have life. I receive not honor from men. But I  
42 know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.  
43 I have come in my Father's name, and ye receive  
me not ; if another shall come in his own name, him  
44 ye will receive. How can ye believe, receiving  
honor one of another, and the honor that is from  
45 God alone ye seek not ? Do not think that I will  
accuse you to the Father ; there is one that accuses  
46 you, Moses in whom ye trust. For if ye believed  
Moses, ye would believe me ; for he wrote of me.  
47 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words ?

1. VI. AFTER these things Jesus went over the  
2 sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias. And  
a great multitude followed him, because they saw  
3 the signs which he wrought on the sick. And  
Jesus went up into the mountain, and there he sat  
4 with his disciples. And the passover, the feast of  
5 the Jews, was near. Jesus therefore lifting up his  
eyes, and seeing that a great multitude is coming  
to him, says to Philip : Whence shall we buy bread,

## CHAPTER VI.

that these may eat? And this he said to prove 6  
him ; for he himself knew what he was about to do.  
Philip answered him : Two hundred denáries worth 7  
of bread is not sufficient for them, that each one  
may take a little. One of his disciples, Andrew, 8  
the brother of Simon Peter, says to him: There is 9  
lad here, who has five barley loaves and two small  
fishes ; but what are they among so many? Jesus 10  
said, Make the men lie down. Now there was much  
grass in the place. So the men lay down, in number  
about five thousand. And Jesus took the loaves ; 11  
and having given thanks, he distributed to them  
that were lying down ; and likewise of the fishes as  
much as they desired. When they were filled, he 12  
said to his disciples : Gather up the fragments that  
remain, that nothing be lost. Therefore they gath- 13  
ered them together, and filled twelve baskets with  
fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained  
over and above to them that had eaten. The men 14  
therefore, seeing the sign that Jesus wrought, said :  
This is of a truth the Prophet that comes into the  
world.

Jesus therefore, knowing that they were about to 15  
come and take him by force, to make him a king,  
withdrew again into the mountain, himself alone.  
And when evening was come, his disciples went 16  
down to the sea, and entering into the ship, were 17  
going over the sea to Capernaum. And it was now  
dark, and Jesus had not come to them. And the 18

## JOHN.

- sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew.
- 19 When therefore they had rowed about twenty-five or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh to the ship ; and they were afraid.
- 20 But he says to them : It is I, be not afraid. Then
- 21 they willingly received him into the ship ; and immediately the ship was at the land whither they were going.
- 22 On the morrow, the multitude that stood on the other side of the sea, seeing that there was no other boat there but one, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the ship, but his disciples went
- 23 away alone ; (but there came other boats from Tiberias near to the place where they ate bread, when
- 24 the Lord had given thanks) ; when therefore the multitude saw that Jesus was not there, nor his disciples, they themselves entered into the boats, and
- 25 came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus. And having found him on the other side of the sea, they said
- 26 to him : Rabbi, when camest thou hither ? Jesus answered them and said : Verily, verily, I say to you, ye seek me, not because ye saw signs, but because ye ate of the loaves and were filled. Work
- 27 not for the food that perishes, but for the food that endures unto everlasting life, which the Son of man will give to you ; for him the Father, God, has
- 28 sealed. Therefore said they to him : What shall we
- 29 do, that we may work the works of God ? Jesus answered and said to them : This is the work of

## CHAPTER VI.

God, that ye believe on him whom he has sent.  
They therefore said to him : What sign dost thou 30  
then, that we may see, and believe thee? What  
dost thou work? Our fathers ate the manna in the 31  
wilderness; as it is written, He gave them bread  
from heaven to eat. Jesus therefore said to them : 32  
Verily, verily, I say to you, Moses has not given  
you the bread from heaven; but my Father gives  
you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of 33  
God is that which comes down out of heaven, and  
gives life to the world.

Therefore said they to him : Lord, evermore give 34  
us this bread. Jesus said to them, I am the bread 35  
of life. He that comes to me shall never hunger,  
and he that believes on me shall never thirst. But 36  
I said to you, that ye have also seen me, and do  
not believe. All that the Father gives me shall 37  
come to me; and him that comes to me I will not  
cast out. Because I have come down from heaven, 38  
not to do my own will, but the will of him that  
sent me. And this is the will of him that sent me, 39  
that of all which he has given me I should lose  
nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. For 40  
this is the will of my Father, that every one that  
sees the Son, and believes on him, may have ever-  
lasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day.

The Jews therefore murmured at him, because he 41

## JOHN.

- said, I am the bread that came down out of heaven.
- 42 And they said : Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know ? How then does this man say, I have come down out of heaven ?
- 43 Jesus answered and said to them : Murmur not
- 44 among yourselves. No one can come to me, except the Father who sent me draw him ; and I will
- 45 raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they shall all be taught of God. Every one that has heard from the Father, and has
- 46 learned, comes to me. Not that any one has seen the Father, save he who is from God ; he has seen the Father.
- 47 Verily, verily, I say to you, he that believes on
- 48 me has everlasting life. I am the bread of life.
- 49 Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and
- 50 are dead. This is the bread that comes down out of heaven, that one may eat thereof, and not die.
- 51 I am the living bread that came down out of heaven. If any one eat of this bread, he shall live forever ; yea, and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.
- 52 The Jews therefore contended with one another, saying : How can this man give us his flesh to eat ?
- 53 Jesus therefore said to them : Verily, verily, I say to you, except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man,
- 54 and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. He that eats my flesh, and drinks my blood, has eternal
- 55 life ; and I will raise him up at the last day. For

## CHAPTER VI.

my flesh is food indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. He that eats my flesh, and drinks my blood, abides in me, and I in him. As the living Father sent me, and I live because of the Father; so he that eateth me, he also shall live because of me. This is the bread that came down out of heaven. Not as your fathers ate the manna, and are dead; he that eats of this bread shall live forever.

These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

Many therefore of his disciples, when they heard it, said: This is a hard saying; who can hear it? But Jesus, knowing in himself that his disciples murmured at this, said to them: Does this offend you? What then if ye behold the Son of man ascending up where he was before? It is the spirit that quickens, the flesh profits nothing; the words which I have spoken to you are spirit, and are life. But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who it was that should betray him. And he said: For this cause I have said to you, that no one can come to me, except it be given him of the Father.

From this time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

Jesus said therefore to the twelve, Will ye also

---

V. 55. *Gr.* is true food *ib.* is true drink.



## JOHN.

68 go away? Simon Peter answered him : Lord, to  
whom shall we go? Thou hast words of eternal  
69 life. And we believe and know, that thou art the  
70 Holy one of God. Jesus answered them : Did I not  
71 choose you, the twelve, and one of you is a devil? He  
spake of Judas Iscariot, son of Simon ; for he it was  
that would betray him, being one of the twelve.

- 1 VII. AND after these things Jesus walked in  
Galilee ; for he would not walk in Judea, because  
the Jews were seeking to kill him.
- 2 Now the feast of the Jews, the feast of tabernacles,  
3 was at hand. His brothers therefore said to him :  
Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples  
4 also may behold thy works that thou doest. For  
no one doeth anything in secret, and he himself  
seeks to be known openly. If thou doest these  
5 things, manifest thyself to the world. For neither did  
6 his brothers believe on him. Jesus therefore says to  
them : My time is not yet come ; but your time is  
7 always ready. The world can not hate you ; but  
me it hates, because I testify of it, that its works  
8 are evil. Go ye up to the feast. I go not up to  
this feast ; because my time is not yet fully come.
- 9 Having said these things to them, he remained  
10 in Galilee. But when his brothers had gone up to  
the feast, then he also went up, not openly, but as it  
were in secret.
- 11 The Jews therefore sought him at the feast, and

## CHAPTER VII.

said, Where is he? And there was much murmur- 12  
ing among the multitudes concerning him. Some  
said, He is a good man; others said, Nay, but he  
misleads the multitude. No one, however, spake 13  
openly of him for fear of the Jews.

But when it was now the midst of the feast, 14  
Jesus went up into the temple and taught. And 15  
the Jews marvelled, saying: How knows this man  
letters, having never learned? Jesus therefore 16  
answered them, and said: My teaching is not mine,  
but his that sent me. If any one desires to do his 17  
will, he shall know of the teaching, whether it is of  
God, or whether I speak from myself. He that 18  
speaks from himself seeks his own glory; but he  
that seeks the glory of him that sent him, the same  
is true, and there is no unrighteousness in him.

Has not Moses given you the law, and none of 19  
you keeps the law? Why do ye seek to kill me?  
The multitude answered and said, Thou hast a devil; 20  
who seeks to kill thee? Jesus answered and said 21  
to them, I did one work, and ye all marvel. Moses 22  
has for this cause given you circumcision, not that  
it is of Moses, but of the fathers; and on the sab-  
bath ye circumcise a man. If a man receives cir- 23  
cumcision on the sabbath, that the law of Moses  
may not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I  
made a man altogether whole on the sabbath? Judge 24  
not according to appearance, but judge the righteous  
judgment.

## JOHN.

- 25 Then said some of those of Jerusalem: Is not this  
26 he whom they seek to kill? But, lo, he speaks  
boldly, and they say nothing to him. Did the  
27 rulers know in truth that this is the Christ? But  
we know this man, whence he is; but when the  
Christ comes, no one knows whence he is.
- 28 Therefore cried Jesus, teaching in the temple  
and saying: Ye both know me, and ye know whence  
I am; and I have not come of myself, but he that sent  
29 me is true, whom ye know not. I know him; be-  
30 cause I am from him, and he sent me. Therefore  
sought they to seize him; and no one laid hands on  
him, because his hour had not yet come.
- 31 But of the multitude many believed on him, and  
said: When the Christ comes, will he work more  
32 signs than these which this man wrought? The  
Pharisees heard the multitude murmuring these  
things concerning him; and the chief priests and  
33 the Pharisees sent officers to seize him. Then said  
Jesus: Yet a little while am I with you, and I go  
34 to him that sent me. Ye shall seek me, and shall  
not find me; and where I am, ye can not come.
- 35 The Jews said therefore among themselves: Whither  
will this man go, that we shall not find him? Will  
he go to those dispersed among the Greeks, and  
36 teach the Greeks? What is this saying that he  
said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me; and  
where I am, ye can not come?

---

V. 26. *or, have the rulers come to know*

## CHAPTER VII.

In the last day, the great day of the feast, Jesus 37 stood and cried, saying : If any one thirst, let him come to me and drink. He that believes on me, as 38 said the Scripture, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. And this spake he concerning the 39 Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive ; for the Holy Spirit was not yet [given], because Jesus was not yet glorified.

Some of the multitude therefore, hearing the 40 words, said : Of a truth this is the Prophet. Others 41 said, This is the Christ. But some said, Does the Christ then come out of Galilee? Did not the 42 Scripture say, that the Christ comes of the seed of David, and from the town of Bethlehem, where David was? A division therefore arose among the 43 multitude because of him. And some of them 44 desired to seize him ; but no one laid hands on him.

The officers therefore came to the chief priests 45 and Pharisees ; and they said to them, Why did ye not bring him? The officers answered, Never man 46 spake like this man. The Pharisees answered them : 47 Are ye also led astray? Have any of the rulers 48 believed on him, or of the Pharisees? But this 49 people, that knows not the law, are accursed. Ni- 50 codemus says to them, (he that came to him by night, being one of them,) Does our law judge a 51 man, except it first hear from him, and know what

---

V. 46. *In the oldest copies* : Never man spake thus.

JOHN.

52 he doeth? They answered and said to him: Art  
thou also of Galilee? Search, and see, that out of  
53 Galilee arises no prophet. [And every man went to  
1 his own house. Jesus went to the mount of the  
Olives.

2 And early in the morning he came again into the  
temple, and all the people came to him; and he sat  
3 down, and taught them. And the scribes and the  
Pharisees bring to him a woman taken in adultery;  
4 and setting her in the midst, they say to him:  
Teacher, this woman was taken in adultery, in the  
5 very act. Now in the law Moses commanded us,  
that such should be stoned; what then sayest thou?  
6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have  
whereof to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down,  
7 and with his finger wrote on the ground. And  
when they continued asking him, he raised himself  
up, and said to them: He that is without sin among  
8 you, let him first cast the stone at her. And again he  
9 stooped down, and wrote on the ground. And they  
hearing it, and being convicted by their conscience,  
went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, unto  
the last; and Jesus was left alone, and the woman  
10 standing in the midst. And Jesus raising himself  
up, and seeing none but the woman, said to her:  
Woman, where are they, thine accusers? Did no

---

V. 52. *or*, has arisen no prophet.

Ch. 7:53—8:11. The words in brackets are wanting in most of the ancient copies.

## CHAPTER VIII.

one condemn thee? She said, No one, Lord. And 11  
Jesus said to her : Neither do I condemn thee ; go,  
and sin no more.]

Again therefore Jesus spake to them, saying : I 12  
am the light of the world ; he that follows me shall  
not walk in the darkness, but shall have the light of  
life. The Pharisees therefore said to him : Thou 13  
bearest witness of thyself ; thy witness is not true.  
Jesus answered and said to them : Though I bear 14  
witness of myself, my witness is true ; because I  
know whence I came, and whither I go ; but ye  
know not whence I come, or whither I go. Ye 15  
judge according to the flesh ; I judge no one. And 16  
even if I judge, my judgment is true ; because I am  
not alone, but I and the Father that sent me. It 17  
is written also in your law, that the witness of two  
men is true. I am one that bear witness of myself, 18  
and the Father that sent me bears witness of me.  
They said therefore to him : Where is thy Father ? 19  
Jesus answered : Ye know neither me, nor my  
Father. If ye knew me, ye would know my Father  
also.

These words spake he in the treasury, while teach- 20  
ing in the temple ; and no one laid hands on him,  
because his hour had not yet come.

Therefore said he again to them : I go away, and 21  
ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sin. Whither  
I go, ye can not come. The Jews therefore said : 22  
Will he kill himself ? because he says, Whither I

JOHN.

23 go, ye can not come. And he said to them : Ye are  
from beneath ; I am from above. Ye are of this  
24 world ; I am not of this world. I said therefore to  
you, that ye shall die in your sins ; for if ye believe  
25 not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins. There-  
fore said they to him : Who art thou ? And Jesus  
said to them : That which I also say to you from  
26 the beginning. I have many things to say and to  
judge concerning you. But he that sent me is true ;  
and the things which I heard from him, these I  
27 speak to the world. They understood not that he  
spake to them of the Father.

28 Therefore Jesus said to them : When ye have  
lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I  
am he ; and I do nothing of myself, but as the Father  
29 taught me, I speak these things. And he that sent  
me is with me. He has not left me alone ; because  
30 I do always the things that please him. As he  
spake these words, many believed on him.

31 Jesus therefore said to those Jews who believ-  
ed on him : If ye continue in my word, ye are truly  
32 my disciples ; and ye shall know the truth, and  
33 the truth shall make you free. They answered  
him : We are Abraham's seed, and have never been  
in bondage to any one. How sayest thou, Ye shall  
34 be made free. Jesus answered them : Verily, verily,  
I say to you, every one who commits sin is a ser-  
35 vant of sin. And the servant abides not in the house  
36 forever. The Son abides forever ; if therefore the

## CHAPTER VIII.

Son shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. I 37  
know that ye are Abraham's seed ; but ye seek to  
kill me, because my word has no place in you. I 38  
speak what I have seen with my Father ; and ye  
therefore do what ye have heard from your father.

They answered and said to him, Our father is 39  
Abraham. Jesus says to them : If ye were Abra-  
ham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham.  
But now ye seek to kill me, a man that has spoken 40  
to you the truth, which I heard from God: This  
did not Abraham. Ye do the works of your father. 41  
They said to him : We are not born of fornication ;  
we have one father, God. Jesus said to them, If 42  
God were your father, ye would love me : for from  
God I came forth, and am come ; neither have I  
come of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not 43  
understand my speech ? Because ye can not hear  
my word. Ye are of your father the Devil, and the 44  
lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer  
from the beginning, and abides not in the truth, be-  
cause truth is not in him. When he speaks a lie,  
he speaks of his own ; because he is a liar, and the  
father of it. And because I speak the truth, ye 45  
believe me not.

Which of you convicts me of sin ? If I speak 46  
truth, why do ye not believe me ? He that is of 47  
God hears God's words ; ye therefore hear not,  
because ye are not of God.

The Jews answered and said to him : Say we not 48



## JOHN.

well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil?  
49 Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honor my  
50 Father, and ye dishonor me. And I seek not my  
own glory; there is one that seeks, and judges.  
51 Verily, verily, I say to you, if any one keep my say-  
52 ing, he shall never see death. The Jews said to him,  
Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is  
dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep  
53 my saying, he shall never taste of death. Art thou  
greater than our father Abraham, who is dead?  
And the prophets are dead. Whom makest thou  
54 thyself? Jesus answered: If I honor myself, my  
honor is nothing. It is my Father that honors me,  
55 of whom ye say, that he is your God. And ye  
know him not; but I know him. And if I say, I  
know him not, I shall be a liar like to you. But I  
56 know him, and I keep his word. Abraham, your  
father, rejoiced to see my day; and he saw it, and  
57 was glad. The Jews therefore said to him: Thou  
art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abra-  
58 ham? Jesus said to them: Verily, verily, I say to  
59 you, before Abraham was, I am. They took up  
stones therefore to cast at him. But Jesus hid  
himself, and went out of the temple.

1 IX. AND passing along, he saw a man blind from  
2 his birth. And his disciples asked him, saying:  
Master, who sinned, this man or his parents, that  
3 he should be born blind? Jesus answered: Neither

## CHAPTER IX.

this man sinned, nor his parents ; but that the works  
of God should be made manifest in him. I must 4  
work the works of him that sent me, while it is day.  
Night is coming, when none can work. As long 5  
as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

When he had thus spoken, he spit on the ground, 6  
and made clay of the spittle, and anointed the eyes  
of the blind man with the clay, and said to him : 7  
Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is inter-  
preted, Sent.) He went away therefore, and washed,  
and came seeing.

The neighbors therefore, and they who before had 8  
seen him that he was a beggar, said : Is not this he  
that sits and begs ? Some said, This is he ; and 9  
others, He is like him ; he said, I am he. There- 10  
fore said they to him, How were thine eyes opened ?  
He answered : A man called Jesus made clay, and 11  
anointed mine eyes, and said to me, Go to the pool  
of Siloam, and wash. And I went away and  
washed, and received sight. They said to him, 12  
Where is he ? He said, I know not.

They bring to the Pharisees him that before was 13  
blind. And it was the sabbath when Jesus made 14  
the clay, and opened his eyes. Again therefore the 15  
Pharisees also asked him how he received sight. He  
said to them : He put clay upon mine eyes, and I  
washed, and do see. Therefore said some of the 16  
Pharisees : This man is not from God, because he  
keeps not the sabbath. Others said, How can a

JOHN.

- man that is a sinner do such signs? And there was  
17 a division among them. They say to the blind man  
again: What sayest thou of him, seeing that he  
opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.
- 18 The Jews therefore did not believe concerning  
him, that he was blind and received sight, until they  
19 called the parents of him that received sight. And  
they asked them, saying: Is this your son, who ye  
say was born blind? How then does he now see?  
20 His parents answered them and said: We know  
that this is our son, and that he was born blind.  
21 But by what means he now sees, we know not; or  
who opened his eyes, we know not. He is of age;  
22 ask him. He shall speak for himself. These words  
spake his parents, because they feared the Jews; for  
the Jews had agreed already, that if any one con-  
fessed him as Christ, he should be put out of the  
23 synagogue. Therefore his parents said: He is of  
age; ask him.
- 24 They therefore called a second time the man that  
was blind, and said to him: Give glory to God; we  
25 know that this man is a sinner. He answered there-  
fore: Whether he is a sinner, I know not; one  
thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see.  
26 Then said they to him again: What did he to thee?  
27 How opened he thine eyes? He answered them:  
I have told you already, and ye did not hear.  
Wherefore would ye hear again? Will ye also be-  
28 come his disciples? They reviled him, and said:

## CHAPTER IX.

Thou art his disciple ; but we are Moses' disciples.  
We know that God has spoken to Moses ; but as 29  
for this man, we know not whence he is. The man 30  
answered and said to them : Why herein is a mar-  
velous thing, that ye know not whence he is, and  
he has opened mine eyes. Now we know that God 31  
hears not sinners. But if any one is a worshiper of  
God, and doeth his will, him he hears. Since the 32  
world began, it was not heard that any one opened  
the eyes of one born blind. If this man were not 33  
from God, he could do nothing. They answered 34  
and said to him : Thou wast altogether born  
in sins, and dost thou teach us ? And they cast  
him out.

Jesus heard that they had cast him out ; and find- 35  
ing him, he said to him : Dost thou believe on the  
Son of God ? He answered and said : Who then is 36  
he, Lord, that I may believe on him ? And Jesus 37  
said to him : Thou hast both seen him, and he it is  
that talks with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. 38  
And he worshiped him.

And Jesus said : For judgment came I into this 39  
world ; that they who see not may see, and that  
they who see may become blind. And they of the 40  
Pharisees who were with him heard these words,  
and said to him, Are we also blind ? Jesus said to 41  
them : If ye were blind, ye would not have sin.  
But now ye say, We see. Your sin remains !

JOHN.

- 1 X. VERILY, verily, I say to you : He that enters  
not through the door into the sheepfold, but climbs  
2 up some other way, the same is a thief and a rob-  
ber. But he that enters in through the door is the  
3 shepherd of the sheep. To him the porter opens,  
and the sheep hear his voice ; and he calls his sheep  
4 by name, and leads them out. And when he has  
put forth all his own, he goes before them ; and the  
5 sheep follow him, for they know his voice. And a  
stranger they will not follow, but will flee from him ;  
because they know not the voice of strangers.
- 6 This parable spake Jesus to them ; but they un-  
derstood not what things they were which he spake  
to them.
- 7 Therefore said Jesus to them again : Verily, verily,  
8 I say to you, I am the door of the sheep. All who  
came before me are thieves and robbers ; but the  
9 sheep did not hear them. I am the door. If any  
one enter in through me, he shall be saved, and shall  
10 go in and out and find pasture. The thief comes  
not but to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I came  
that they may have life, and that they may have it  
abundantly.
- 11 I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd  
12 lays down his life for the sheep. But he that is a  
hireling, and not a shepherd, whose own the sheep  
are not, sees the wolf coming, and leaves the sheep,  
and flees ; and the wolf catches them, and scatters  
13 the sheep. The hireling flees, because he is a hire-

## CHAPTER X.

ling, and cares not for the sheep. I am the good 14  
shepherd ; and I know mine, and am known by mine,  
as the Father knows me, and I know the Father ; 15  
and I lay down my life for the sheep. And other 16  
sheep I have, which are not of this fold. Them also I  
must bring, and they shall hear my voice ; and there  
shall be one flock, one shepherd. For this the Father 17  
loves me, because I lay down my life, that I may take  
it again. No one takes it from me, but I lay it down 18  
of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have  
power to take it again. This commandment I re-  
ceived from my Father.

Again there arose a division among the Jews 19  
because of these words. And many of them said : 20  
He has a devil, and is mad ; why do ye hear him ?  
Others said : These are not the words of one that 21  
has a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the  
blind ?

And it was the feast of the dedication, in Jerusa- 22  
lem ; and it was winter. And Jesus was walking 23  
in the temple, in the porch of Solomon. The Jews 24  
therefore came around him, and said to him : How  
long dost thou hold us in doubt ? If thou art the  
Christ, tell us plainly.

Jesus answered them : I told you, and ye believe 25  
not. The works that I do in my Father's name,  
these bear witness of me. But ye believe not ; for 26

---

V. 24. *or*, hold us in expectation

JOHN.

27 ye are not of my sheep, as I said to you. My sheep  
hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow  
28 me; and I give to them eternal life; and they shall  
never perish, nor shall any one pluck them out  
29 of my hand. My Father, who has given them to  
me, is greater than all; and no one is able to pluck  
30 them out of my Father's hand. I and the Father  
are one.

31 The Jews therefore took up stones again to stone  
32 him. Jesus answered them: Many good works  
have I shewed you from my Father; for which of  
33 those works do ye stone me? The Jews answered  
him: For a good work we stone thee not, but  
for blasphemy, and because thou, being man, makest  
34 thyself God. Jesus answered them: Is it not  
35 written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? If he  
called them gods, to whom the word of God came,  
36 and the Scripture can not be broken; say ye  
of him, whom the Father sanctified, and sent into  
the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am  
37 the Son of God? If I do not the works of my  
38 Father, believe me not. But if I do, though ye  
believe not me, believe the works; that ye may  
learn and know, that the Father is in me, and I in  
39 the Father. Therefore they sought again to seize  
him; and he went forth, out of their hand.

40 And he went away again beyond the Jordan, to  
the place where John was at first immersing; and  
41 there he abode. And many came to him, and said:

## CHAPTER XI.

John indeed wrought no sign; but all things that John spake of this man were true. And many believed on him there. 42

XI. Now a certain one was sick, Lazarus of Bethany, from the village of Mary and Martha her sister. It was the Mary who anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick. The sisters therefore sent to him, saying: Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. And Jesus hearing it, said: This sickness is not for death, but for the sake of the glory of God, that the Son of God may be glorified thereby. 1 2 3 4

Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. When therefore he heard that he was sick, he then abode two days in the place where he was. Then after this he says to the disciples, Let us go into Judea again. The disciples say to him: Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again? Jesus answered: Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any one walk in the day, he stumbles not, because he sees the light of this world. But if any one walk in the night, he stumbles, because the light is not in him. 5 6 7 8 9

These things said he; and after this he says to them: Lazarus our friend has fallen asleep; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep. Therefore said his disciples: Lord if he sleep, he will do well. 10 11 12



## JOHN.

13 But Jesus had spoken of his death ; but they thought  
14 that he said it of taking rest in sleep. Then there-  
fore Jesus said to them plainly, Lazarus is dead.  
15 And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there,  
16 that ye may believe. But let us go to him. There-  
fore said Thomas, who is called Didymus, to his  
fellow disciples : Let us also go, that we may die  
with him.

17 Having come therefore, Jesus found that he had  
already been four days in the tomb.

18 Now Bethany was nigh to Jerusalem, about fif-  
19 teen furlongs off. And many of the Jews had come  
to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning  
their brother.

20 Therefore Martha, when she heard that Jesus is  
coming, went and met him ; but Mary sat in the  
21 house. Then said Martha to Jesus : Lord, if thou  
22 hadst been here, my brother had not died. But  
even now I know that whatever thou shalt ask of  
23 God, God will give it thee. Jesus says to her : Thy  
24 brother shall rise again. Martha says to him : I  
know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at  
25 the last day. Jesus said to her : I am the resurrec-  
tion, and the life ; he that believes on me, though  
26 he be dead, yet shall he live ; and whosoever lives  
and believes on me, shall never die. Believest thou  
27 this ? She says to him : Yea, Lord ; I believe that  
thou art the Christ, the Son of God, who comes  
28 into the world. And having said this, she went

## CHAPTER XI.

away, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying :  
The Teacher is come, and calls for thee. And she, 29  
when she heard it, arose quickly and came to him.

Now Jesus had not yet come into the village, but 30  
was in the place where Martha met him. The 31  
Jews therefore who were with her in the house and  
comforting her, when they saw that Mary rose up  
hastily and went out, followed her, saying : She goes  
to the tomb to weep there.

Mary therefore, when she came where Jesus was, 32  
seeing him, fell down at his feet, saying to him :  
Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not  
died.

Jesus therefore, when he saw her weeping, and 33  
the Jews weeping who came with her, groaned in  
spirit, and was troubled. And he said, Where have 34  
ye laid him? They say to him, Lord, come and  
see. Jesus wept. 35

The Jews therefore said, Behold how he loved 36  
him! And some of them said : Could not this man, 37  
who opened the eyes of the blind, have caused even  
that this man should not have died? Jesus there- 38  
fore again groaning in himself comes to the tomb.  
It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.

Jesus says : Take away the stone. The sister of 39  
him that was dead, Martha, says to him : Lord, by  
this time he stinketh ; for he has been dead four  
days. Jesus says to her : Said I not to thee, that, 40  
if thou believe, thou shalt see the glory of God ?

## JOHN.

41 So they took away the stone. And Jesus raised  
his eyes upward, and said : Father, I thank thee  
42 that thou didst hear me. And I knew that thou  
always hearest me ; but for the sake of the multitude  
standing around I said it, that they might believe  
43 that thou hast sent me. And when he had thus  
spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come  
44 forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound  
hand and foot with grave clothes ; and his face was  
bound about with a napkin. Jesus says to them :  
Loose him, and let him go.

45 Many therefore of the Jews who came to Mary,  
46 and saw what he did, believed on him. But some  
of them went away to the Pharisees, and told them  
what Jesus had done.

47 Therefore the chief priests and the Pharisees gath-  
ered a council, and said : What do we, seeing that  
48 this man works many signs ? If we let him thus alone,  
all will believe on him ; and the Romans will come  
49 and take away both our place and nation. And a  
certain one of them, Caiaphas, being high priest  
50 that year, said to them : Ye know nothing ; nor do  
ye consider that it is expedient for us, that one man  
die for the people, and that the whole nation perish  
51 not. And this he spake not of himself ; but being  
high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus  
52 should die for the nation ; and not for the nation  
only, but that also he should gather together into  
one the children of God that were scattered abroad.

## CHAPTER XII.

Therefore from that day forth they took counsel 53  
together to put him to death. Jesus therefore no 54  
longer walked openly among the Jews ; but departed  
thence to the country near to the wilderness, to a  
city called Ephraim, and there continued with his  
disciples.

And the passover of the Jews was at hand ; and 55  
many went up to Jerusalem out of the country, be-  
fore the passover, that they might purify themselves.  
They sought therefore for Jesus, and said among 56  
themselves, as they stood in the temple : What  
think ye, that he will not come to the feast? Now 57  
the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a com-  
mandment, that, if any one knew where he was, he  
should make it known, that they might seize him.

XII. THEN Jesus six days before the passover 1  
came to Bethany, where Lazarus was who had been 2  
dead, whom Jesus raised from the dead. They 3  
therefore made him a supper there, and Martha 4  
served ; and Lazarus was one of them that reclined  
at table with him.

Then Mary took a pound of ointment of pure 3  
spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of  
Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair ; and the  
house was filled with the odour of the ointment.  
Then says one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Si- 4  
mon's son, who was about to betray him : Why was 5

JOHN.

- not this ointment sold for three hundred denáries,  
6 and given to the poor? This he said, not because  
he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief,  
and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.  
7 Then said Jesus: Let her alone; she has kept it to the  
8 day of my preparation for burial. For the poor ye  
have always with you; but me ye have not always.  
9 A great multitude of the Jews therefore knew  
that he was there. And they came not because of  
Jesus only, but that they might see Lazarus also,  
whom he had raised from the dead.  
10 But the chief priests consulted that they might  
11 put Lazarus also to death; because by reason of him  
many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.  
12 On the morrow a great multitude that had come  
to the feast, hearing that Jesus is coming to Jeru-  
13 salem, took branches of the palm trees and went  
forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna; Blessed is  
he that comes in the name of the Lord, the King  
14 of Israel. And Jesus, having found a young ass,  
15 sat thereon; as it is written: Fear not, daughter of  
Zion; behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's  
16 colt. These things his disciples understood not at  
the first. But when Jesus was glorified, then re-  
membered they that these things were written of  
him, and that they had done these things to him.

---

V. 5. Denáry,  $7\frac{1}{2}$ d. sterling, or fifteen cents.

V. 6. *or*, and bore off

V. 7. *In the oldest copies*: that she may keep it

## CHAPTER XII.

The multitude therefore that was with him when 17  
he called Lazarus out of the tomb, and raised him  
from the dead, bare witness. For this the multitude 18  
also met him, because they heard that he had wrought  
this sign. The Pharisees therefore said among them- 19  
selves : Perceive ye that ye avail nothing ? Behold,  
the world is gone away after him.

And there were certain Greeks, of those who 20  
came up to worship at the feast. These came there- 21  
fore to Philip, who was from Bethsaida of Galilee,  
and desired him, saying : Sir, we would see Jesus.  
Philip comes and tells Andrew ; Andrew and Philip 22  
come and tell Jesus.

And Jesus answered them, saying : The hour is 23  
come, that the Son of man should be glorified.  
Verily, verily, I say to you, except the grain of 24  
wheat fall into the ground and die, it abides alone ;  
but if it die, it brings forth much fruit. He that 25  
loves his life shall lose it ; and he that hates his life  
in this world shall keep it unto life eternal. If any 26  
one serve me, let him follow me ; and where I am,  
there shall also my servant be. If any one serve  
me, him will the Father honor.

Now is my soul troubled ; and what shall I say ? 27  
Father, save me from this hour ! But for this cause  
came I unto this hour. Father, glorify thy name. 28

---

V. 27. *or, save me from this hour ?*

## JOHN.

Then came there a voice out of heaven : I both have glorified it, and will glorify it again.

29 The multitude therefore that stood by and heard, said that it thundered ; others said, An angel has  
30 spoken to him. Jesus answered and said : This voice  
31 came not for my sake, but for your sakes. Now is the judgment of this world ; now shall the prince of  
32 this world be cast out. And I, if I be lifted up  
33 from the earth, will draw all men to me. This he said, signifying by what manner of death he should die.

34 The multitude answered him : We have heard out of the law that the Christ abides forever ; and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up ?  
35 Who is this Son of man ? Jesus therefore said to them : Yet a little while is the light among you. Walk while ye have the light, that darkness may not overtake you ; and he that walks in the darkness  
36 knows not whither he goes. While ye have the light, believe in the light, that ye may become sons of light.

These things spake Jesus, and departed, and hid himself from them.

37 But though he had wrought so many signs before  
38 them, they believed not on him. That the saying of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake : Lord, who has believed our report, and to whom has the arm of the Lord been revealed ?  
39 Therefore they could not believe, because Isaiah

### CHAPTER XIII.

said again : He has blinded their eyes, and hardened 40  
ed their heart ; that they should not see with their  
eyes, and understand with their heart, and turn, and  
I should heal them. These things said Isaiah, be- 41  
cause he saw his glory, and spake of him. Yet, 42  
even of the rulers many believed on him ; but be-  
cause of the Pharisees they did not confess him, lest  
they should be put out of the synagogue ; for they 43  
loved the glory of men more than the glory of God.

And Jesus cried and said : He that believes on 44  
me, believes not on me but on him that sent me.  
.And he that beholds me beholds him that sent me. 45  
I have come a light into the world, that whoever 46  
believes on me may not abide in the darkness. And 47  
if any one hear my words, and keep them not, I do  
not judge him ; for I came not to judge the world,  
but to save the world. He that rejects me, and 48  
receives not my words, has one that judges him.  
The word that I spake, that shall judge him in the  
last day. Because I spake not from myself ; but the 49  
Father who sent me, he has given me a command-  
ment, what I should say, and what I should speak.  
And I know that his commandment is everlasting 50  
life. What things I speak therefore, as the Father  
has said to me, so I speak.

XIII. Now before the feast of the passover, 1  
Jesus knowing that his hour was come that he  
should depart out of this world to the Father, hav-



## JOHN.

ing loved his own who were in the world, he loved  
2 them to the end. And supper being served, the  
devil having already put into the heart of Judas  
3 Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him; knowing  
that the Father had given all things into his hands,  
and that he came out from God, and is going to  
4 God, he rises from the supper, and lays aside his  
5 garments, and taking a towel girded himself. After  
that he pours water into the basin, and began to  
wash the feet of his disciples, and to wipe them  
with the towel with which he was girded.

6 He comes therefore to Simon Peter; and Peter  
7 says to him: Lord, dost thou wash my feet? Jesus  
answered and said to him: What I do thou knowest  
8 not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. Peter  
says to him: Never shalt thou wash my feet. Jesus  
answered him: If I wash thee not, thou hast no  
9 part with me. Simon Peter, says to him: Lord,  
not my feet only, but also my hands and my head.  
10 Jesus says to him: He that has bathed has no need  
save to wash the feet, but is wholly clean. And ye  
11 are clean, but not all. For he knew his betrayer;  
therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

12 So after he had washed their feet, and had taken  
his garments, and reclined again at table, he said  
13 to them: Know ye what I have done to you? Ye  
call me the Teacher, and the Master; and ye say  
14 well, for so I am. If I then, the Master and the  
Teacher, have washed your feet, ye also ought to

### CHAPTER XIII.

wash one another's feet. For I have given you an 15  
example, that as I have done to you, ye also should  
do. Verily, verily, I say to you: A servant is not 16  
greater than his lord, nor one that is sent greater  
than he that sent him. If ye know these things, 17  
happy are ye if ye do them.

I speak not of you all; I know whom I chose; 18  
but that the scripture might be fulfilled, He that  
eats bread with me lifted up his heel against me.  
Even now I tell you, before it comes to pass, that 19  
when it comes to pass, ye may believe that I am he.  
Verily, verily, I say to you, he that receives whom- 20  
soever I send receives me; and he that receives me  
receives him that sent me.

When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in 21  
spirit, and testified and said: Verily, verily, I say  
to you, that one of you will betray me. The dis- 22  
ciples therefore looked one on another, doubting of  
whom he spake. Now there was reclining in Jesus' 23  
bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved. To 24  
him therefore Simon Peter beckons and says to  
him: Say who it is of whom he speaks. He then, 25  
leaning back on Jesus' breast, says to him: Lord,  
who is it? Jesus answers: He it is, to whom I 26  
shall give the morsel, when I have dipped it. And  
having dipped the morsel, he gives it to Judas  
Iscariot, son of Simon. And after the morsel, 27

---

V. 16. *or, nor an apostle (i. e. one that is sent).*

## JOHN.

then entered Satan into him. Jesus therefore says to him : What thou doest, do quickly.

28 Now no one at the table knew for what intent  
29 he spake this to him. For some thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus said to him : Buy what we need for the feast ; or, that he should give something to the poor.

30 He then, having received the morsel, went immediately out ; and it was night.

31 When therefore he was gone out, Jesus says :  
Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. If God is glorified in him, God will also glorify him in himself, and will straightway  
32 glorify him. Children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me ; and as I said to the Jews, whither I go ye can not come, so now I say to you.  
33 A new commandment I give to you, that ye love one another ; as I have loved you, that ye also love  
34 one another. By this shall all know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one toward another.

36 Simon Peter says to him : Lord, whither goest thou ? Jesus answered him : Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now ; but thou shalt follow me  
37 afterwards. Peter says to him : Lord, why can not I follow thee now ? I will lay down my life for  
38 thee. Jesus answers : Wilt thou lay down thy life for me ? Verily, verily, I say to thee, the cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

#### CHAPTER XIV.

XIV. LET not your heart be troubled. Believe 1  
in God, and believe in me. In my Father's house 2  
are many mansions ; if it were not so, I would have  
told you ; because I go to prepare a place for you.  
And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will 3  
come again, and will receive you to myself ; that  
where I am, ye may be also. And ye know the 4  
way whither I go.

Thomas says to him : Lord, we know not whither 5  
thou goest ; and how do we know the way ? Jesus 6  
says to him : I am the way, the truth, and the life.  
No one comes to the Father, but by me. If ye 7  
knew me, ye would know my Father also ; and  
from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

Philip says to him : Lord, shew us the Father, 8  
and it suffices us. Jesus says to him, Am I so long 9  
time with you, and dost thou not know me, Philip ?  
He that has seen me has seen the Father ; and how  
sayest thou, Shew us the Father ? Believest thou 10  
not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me ?  
The words that I speak to you I speak not of my-  
self ; but the Father that dwells in me, he doeth the  
works. Believe me, that I am in the Father, and the 11  
Father in me ; or else believe for the very works' sake.

Verily, verily, I say to you, he that believes on 12  
me, the works that I do shall he do also ; and greater  
than these shall he do, because I go to the Father.

---

V. 1. *or, Ye believe in God, believe also in me.*

JOHN.

- 13 And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will  
I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.  
14 If ye shall ask anything in my name, I will do it.  
15 If ye love me, keep my commandments. And I  
16 will ask of the Father, and he will give you another  
17 Comforter, that he may be with you forever ; the  
Spirit of truth, whom the world can not receive, be-  
cause it sees him not, neither knows him ; but ye  
know him, because he abides with you, and shall be  
18 in you. I will not leave you bereaved ; I will come  
to you.  
19 Yet a little while, and the world sees me no more ;  
20 but ye see me ; because I live, ye shall live also. In  
that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and  
21 ye in me, and I in you. He that has my com-  
mandments, and keeps them, he it is that loves me ;  
and he that loves me shall be loved by my Father,  
and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.  
22 Judas says to him (not Iscariot) : Lord, how is it  
that thou wilt manifest thyself to us, and not to the  
23 world ? Jesus answered and said to him : If any  
one loves me, he will keep my word ; and my  
Father will love him, and we will come to him, and  
24 make our abode with him. He that loves me not  
keeps not my words ; and the word which ye hear  
is not mine, but the Father's who sent me.  
25 These things have I spoken to you, while abiding  
26 with you. But the Comforter, the Holy Spirit,

---

V. 18. *Gr.* I will not leave you orphans

## CHAPTER XV.

whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all things which I said to you.

Peace I leave with you, my peace I give to you ; 27  
not as the world gives, give I to you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. Ye 28  
heard how I said to you, I go away, and I come to you. If ye loved me, ye would have rejoiced that I go to the Father ; because the Father is greater than I. And now I have told you before it comes to 29  
pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe.

I will no longer talk much with yôu ; for the 30  
prince of the world comes, and in me he has nothing. But that the world may know that I love the 31  
Father, and as the Father gave me commandment, so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

XV. I AM the true vine, and my Father is the 1  
husbandmân. Every branch in me that bears not 2  
fruit, he takes it away ; and every one that bears fruit, he cleanses it, that it may bear more fruit. Ye 3  
are already clean, through the word which I have spoken to you.

Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch can 4  
not bear fruit of itself, if it abide not in the vine, so neither can ye, if ye abide not in me. I am the 5  
vine, ye are the branches. He that abides in me and I in him, the same bears much fruit ; because without me ye can do nothing. If any one abide 6

## JOHN.

- not in me, he is cast forth as the branch, and is withered ; and they gather them, and cast them into  
7 the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ask whatever ye will, and it shall be done to you.
- 8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much  
9 fruit ; and ye shall become my disciples. As the Father loved me, I also loved you ; abide in my love.  
10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love ; as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.
- 11 These things have I spoken to you, that my joy  
12 may be in you, and your joy be made full. This is my commandment, that ye love one another, as I  
13 loved you. Greater love has no one than this, that  
14 one lay down his life for his friends. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.
- 15 No longer do I call you servants ; because the  
servant knows not what his lord doeth. But I have called you friends ; because all things that I have heard from my Father I have made known to you.  
16 Ye did not choose me, but I chose you, and appointed you that ye may go and bear fruit, and that your fruit may remain ; that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.
- 17 These things I command you, that ye love one an-  
18 other. If the world hates you, ye know that it has hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the  
19 world, the world would love its own ; but because

## CHAPTER XVI.

ye are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, for this the world hates you. Remember the word that I said to you, A servant is not greater than his lord. If they persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do to you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me.

If I had not come and spoken to them, they would not have sin; but now they have no cloak for their sin. He that hates me hates my Father also. If I had not done among them the works which no other one has done, they would not have sin; but now they have both seen and hated both me and my Father. But this comes to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.

But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth, which proceeds from the Father, he shall bear witness of me. And ye also shall bear witness, because ye are with me from the beginning.

XVI. THESE things have I spoken to you, that ye should not be offended. They will put you out of the synagogues; yea, a time is coming, that every one who kills you will think he makes an offering to God. And these things will they do to you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. But



## JOHN.

these things I have spoken to you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I told you not from the beginning, because I was with you.

5 And now I go to him that sent me ; and none of  
6 you asks me, Whither goest thou ? But because I  
have spoken these things to you, sorrow has filled  
7 your heart. But I tell you the truth, it is expedient  
for you that I depart ; for if I depart not, the  
Comforter will not come to you ; but if I go, I will  
8 send him to you. And, when he is come he will  
convict the world in respect of sin, and of righteous-  
9 ness, and of judgment ; of sin, in that they believe  
10 not on me ; of righteousness, in that I go to my  
11 Father, and ye behold me no more ; of judgment,  
in that the prince of this world has been judged.

12 I have yet many things to say to you, but ye can  
13 not bear them now. But when he, the Spirit of  
truth, is come, he will guide you into all the truth ;  
for he shall not speak from himself, but whatever he  
hears that shall he speak, and he shall shew you the  
14 things to come. He shall glorify me ; because he shall  
15 receive of mine, and shall shew it to you. All things  
that the Father has are mine. Therefore I said,  
that he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it to  
16 you. A little while, and ye behold me not ; and  
again a little while, and ye shall see me.

17 Therefore said some of his disciples to one another :  
What is this that he says to us, A little while, and

## CHAPTER XVI.

ye behold me not ; and again a little while, and ye shall see me ; and, I go to the Father ? They said 18 therefore : What is this that he says, A little while ? We know not what he says.

Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, 19 and said to them : Do ye inquire of this with one another, that I said, A little while, and ye behold me not ; and again a little while, and ye shall see me ? Verily, verily, I say to you, that ye shall 20 weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice ; and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail 21 has sorrow, because her hour is come ; but when she has borne the child, she remembers no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. And so ye now have sorrow ; but I will see you 22 again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no one takes from you.

And in that day ye shall ask nothing of me. 23 Verily, verily, I say to you : Whatever ye shall ask of the Father, he will give it you in my name. Hith- 24 erto have ye asked nothing in my name. Ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be made full.

These things have I spoken to you in parables. 25 A time is coming, when I shall no more speak to you in parables, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. In that day ye shall ask in my name. 26 And I say not to you, that I will pray the Father for you ; for the Father himself loves you, because 27

## JOHN.

ye have loved me, and have believed that I came  
28 forth from God. I came forth from the Father, and  
have come into the world ; again, I leave the world,  
and go to the Father.

29 His disciples say to him : Lo, now thou speakest  
30 plainly, and speakest no parable. Now we know  
that thou knowest all things, and needest not that  
any one should ask thee. By this we believe that  
thou camest forth from God.

31 Jesus answered them : Do ye now believe ? Be-  
32 hold, an hour is coming, and has come, that ye shall  
be scattered, each one to his own, and shall leave me  
alone ; and I am not alone, because the Father is  
with me.

33 These things I have spoken to you, that in me ye  
may have peace. In the world ye have tribulation ;  
but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.

1 XVII. THESE words spake Jesus, and lifted up  
his eyes to heaven, and said ; Father, the hour has  
come ; glorify thy Son, that thy Son may glorify  
2 thee ; as thou gavest him power over all flesh, that  
as many as thou hast given to him, to them he  
3 should give eternal life. And this is the eternal life,  
that they know thee the only true God, and Jesus  
4 Christ, whom thou didst send. I glorified thee on  
the earth ; I finished the work which thou hast given  
5 me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me  
with thine own self, with the glory which I had with

## CHAPTER XVII.

thee before the world was. I manifested thy name 6  
to the men whom thou hast given me out of the  
world. Thine they were, and thou hast given them  
to me; and they have kept thy word. Now they 7  
know that all things whatsoever thou hast given me  
are from thee; because the words which thou gavest 8  
me I have given to them, and they received them,  
and knew in truth that I came forth from thee, and  
believed that thou didst send me. I pray for them; 9  
I pray not for the world, but for them whom thou  
hast given me; for they are thine. And all things 10  
that are mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I  
am glorified in them.

And I am no longer in the world; and these are 11  
in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father,  
keep them in thy name which thou hast given me,  
that they may be one, as we are. While I was with 12  
them, I kept them in thy name. Those whom thou  
hast given me I watched over, and none of them  
perished, except the son of perdition, that the scrip-  
ture might be fulfilled. And now I come to thee; 13  
and these things I speak in the world, that they may  
have my joy made full in them. I have given them 14  
thy word; and the world hated them, because they  
are not of the world, as I am not of the world. I 15  
pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the  
world; but that thou shouldest keep them from the  
evil. They are not of the world, as I am not of the 16  
world. Sanctify them in the truth; thy word is 17

## JOHN.

18 truth. As thou didst send me into the world, I also  
19 sent them into the world. And for their sakes I  
sanctify myself, that they also may be sanctified in  
20 the truth. And I pray not for these only, but also  
for them who believe on me through their word ;  
21 that all may be one ; as thou, Father, in me and I  
in thee, that they also may be in us ; that the world  
22 may believe that thou didst send me. And the glory  
which thou hast given to me I have given to them,  
23 that they may be one, as we are one ; I in them,  
and thou in me, that they may be perfected into one ;  
that the world may know that thou didst send me,  
and lovedst them as thou lovedst me.

24 Father, those whom thou hast given me, I will  
that where I am they also be with me ; that they  
may behold my glory, which thou hast given me ;  
because thou lovedst me before the foundation of the  
25 world. Righteous Father ! And the world knew  
thee not ! But I knew thee, and these knew that thou  
26 didst send me ; and I made known to them thy name,  
and will make it known ; that the love wherewith  
thou lovedst me may be in them, and I in them.

1 XVIII. WHEN Jesus had spoken these words,  
he went out with his disciples beyond the brook  
Kedron, where was a garden, into which he entered  
2 and his disciples. And Judas also, his betrayer,  
knew the place ; because Jesus oftentimes resorted  
thither with his disciples.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

Judas therefore, having received the band and 3  
officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, comes  
thither with torches and lamps and weapons.  
Jesus therefore, knowing all the things that were 4  
coming upon him, went forth and said to them,  
Whom seek ye? They answered him, Jesus the 5  
Nazarene. Jesus says to them, I am he. And  
Judas also, his betrayer, was standing with them.

When therefore he had said to them, I am he, 6  
they went backward, and fell to the ground.

Again therefore he asked them, Whom seek ye? 7  
And they said, Jesus the Nazarene. Jesus answer- 8  
ed, I told you that I am he; if therefore ye seek  
me, let these go their way. That the saying might 9  
be fulfilled, which he spake: Of them whom thou  
hast given me I lost none.

Then Simon Peter, having a sword, drew it and 10  
smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his  
right ear. The servant's name was Malchus. Jesus 11  
therefore said to Peter: Put up thy sword into the  
sheath. The cup which my Father has given me,  
shall I not drink it?

So the band and the captain and the officers of 12  
the Jews took Jesus, and bound him. And they led 13  
him away to Annas first; for he was father-in-law  
of Caiaphas, who was high priest that year. And 14  
Caiaphas was he who counseled the Jews, that it  
was expedient that one man should die for the people.

And Simon Peter and the other disciple followed 15

## JOHN.

- Jesus. That disciple was known to the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the court of
- 16 the high priest. But Peter was standing at the door without. Therefore the other disciple, who was known to the high priest, went out and spake to her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.
- 17 Then the damsel that kept the door says to Peter : Art not thou also one of this man's disciples ? He says, I am not.
- 18 And the servants and the officers were standing there, having made a fire of coals, because it was cold, and were warming themselves ; and Peter was standing with them, and warming himself.
- 19 The high priest therefore asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his teaching. Jesus answered him : I have spoken openly to the world ; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, where all the Jews assemble ; and in secret spake I nothing.
- 21 Why askest thou me ? Ask them that have heard me, what I spake to them. Behold, these know what things I said.
- 22 And when he had said this, one of the officers who was standing by gave Jesus a blow on the face, saying : Answerest thou the high priest so ?
- 23 Jesus answered him : If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil ; but if well, why smitest thou me ?
- 24 Annas sent him bound to Caiaphas the high priest. And Simon Peter was standing and warming himself. They said therefore to him : Art thou

## CHAPTER XVIII.

also one of his disciples? He denied, and said, I am not. One of the servants of the high priest, 2& being a kinsman of him whose ear Peter cut off, says: Did not I see thee in the garden with him? Again therefore Peter denied; and immediately the 27 cock crowed.

Then they lead Jesus from Caiaphas into the 28 Governor's palace; and it was early; and they themselves went not into the palace, that they might not be defiled, but might eat the passover. Pilate 29 therefore went out to them, and said: What accusation bring ye against this man? They an- 30 swered and said to him: If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him up to thee. Pilate therefore said to them: Do ye take him, and 31 judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said to him: It is not lawful for us to put any one to death. That the saying of Jesus might 32 be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying by what manner of death he should die.

Pilate therefore entered into the palace again, 33 and called Jesus, and said to him: Art thou the King of the Jews? Jesus answered: Dost thou 34 say this of thyself, or did others tell thee concerning me? Pilate answered: Am I a Jew? Thine own 35 nation and the chief priests delivered thee to me. What hast thou done? Jesus answered: My king- 36 dom is not of this world. If my kingdom were of this world, my servants would fight, that I might



## JOHN.

not be delivered to the Jews ; but now is my kingdom not from hence. Pilate therefore said to him :  
37 Art thou a king then? Jesus answered : Thou sayest it ; for I am a king. To this end have I been born, and to this end have I come into the world, that I may bear witness to the truth. Every one that is of the truth hears my voice.

38 Pilate says to him, What is truth? And having said this, he went out again to the Jews, and says  
39 to them, I find no fault in him. But ye have a custom, that I should release to you one at the pass-over. Do ye desire therefore that I release to you  
40 the King of the Jews? They all therefore cried out again, saying : Not this one, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

1 XIX. THEN therefore Pilate took Jesus, and  
2 scourged him. And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and put on him a  
3 purple robe ; and they came to him, and said : Hail, King of the Jews! And they gave him blows on the face.

4 Pilate went forth again, and says to them : Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know  
5 that I find no fault in him. Jesus therefore came forth, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe. And he says to them, Behold the man !

6 When therefore the chief priests and the officers saw him, they cried out, saying : Crucify him, crucify

## CHAPTER XIX.

him. Pilate says to them : Do ye take him, and crucify him ; for I find no fault in him. The Jews answered him : We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God. 7

When therefore Pilate heard this saying, he was the more afraid. And he went again into the palace, and says to Jesus, Whence art thou ? But Jesus gave him no answer. Then says Pilate to him : Dost thou not speak to me ? Knowest thou not that I have power to release thee, and have power to crucify thee ? Jesus answered : Thou wouldst have no power against me, except it were given thee from above. Therefore he that delivers me to thee has the greater sin. Thenceforth Pilate sought to release him. But the Jews cried out, saying : If thou let this man go, thou art not a friend of Cæsar. Whosoever makes himself a king speaks against Cæsar. 8 9 10 11 12

When therefore Pilate heard these words, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down on the judgment seat in a place called the Pavement, and in Hebrew, Gabbatha. And it was the preparation of the pass-over, and about the sixth hour. And he says to the Jews, Behold your king ! But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate says to them, Shall I crucify your king ? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cæsar. Then therefore he delivered him to them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led him away. 13 14 15 16

## JOHN.

- 17 And bearing his cross he went forth into the place  
called the place of a skull, which in Hebrew is called  
18 Golgotha ; where they crucified him, and two others  
with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.  
19 And Pilate also wrote a title, and put it on the cross.  
And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH  
THE KING OF THE JEWS.
- 20 This title therefore many of the Jews read ; for  
the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the  
city, and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and  
21 Latin. Therefore said the chief priests of the Jews  
to Pilate : Write not, The King of the Jews ; but  
22 that he said, I am King of the Jews. Pilate an-  
swered : What I have written I have written.
- 23 Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus,  
took his garments, and made four parts, to every  
soldier a part, and also his coat. Now the coat  
was without seam, woven from the top throughout.  
24 They said therefore to one another : Let us not rend  
it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be ; that the  
scripture might be fulfilled which says : They parted  
my garments among them, and for my vesture they  
cast lots.
- 25 These things the soldiers did. And there were  
standing by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his  
mother's sister, Mary the wife of Clopas, and Mary  
26 the Magdalene. Jesus therefore seeing his mother,  
and the disciple whom he loved standing by, says  
27 to his mother : Woman, behold thy son ! Then he

## CHAPTER XIX.

says to the disciple : Behold thy mother ! And from that hour the disciple took her to his own home.

After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now finished, that the scripture might be accomplished, says, I thirst. Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar ; and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it upon hyssop, and presented it to his mouth. When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said : It is finished ; and he bowed his head, and gave up his spirit.

The Jews therefore, since it was the preparation, that the bodies might not remain upon the cross on the sabbath, (for that sabbath day was a great day,) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away. So the soldiers came, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other who was crucified with him. But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was already dead, they brake not his legs. But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith there came out blood and water.

And he that has seen has borne witness, and his witness is true and he knows that he says what is true, that ye also might believe. For these things came to pass, that the scripture might be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken. And again another scripture says, They shall look on him whom they pierced.

And after this, Joseph from Arimathea, being a

## JOHN.

- disciple of Jesus but secretly for fear of the Jews, besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus ; and Pilate gave him leave. He came  
39 therefore, and took away the body of Jesus. And there came also Nicodemus, who at the first came to Jesus by night, bringing a mixture of myrrh and  
40 aloes, about a hundred pounds weight. Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen cloths with the spices, as is the custom of the Jews to prepare for burial.
- 41 Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a new sepulchre,  
42 wherein no one was yet laid. There they laid Jesus therefore, on account of the preparation of the Jews, because the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

- 1 XX. Now on the first day of the week comes Mary the Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, to the sepulchre, and sees the stone taken away from  
2 the sepulchre. She runs therefore and comes to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and says to them : They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.
- 3 Peter therefore went forth, and the other disciple,  
4 and they went to the sepulchre. And the two ran together ; and the other disciple outran Peter, and  
5 came first to the sepulchre. And stooping down he sees the linen cloths lying ; yet went he not in.

## CHAPTER XX.

Then comes Simon Peter following him; and he 6  
went into the sepulchre, and sees the linen cloths  
lying, and the napkin that was about his head not 7  
lying with the linen cloths, but wrapped together  
in a place by itself. Then therefore the other dis- 8  
ciple went in also, who came first to the sepulchre,  
and he saw, and believed. For not even yet did 9  
they know the scripture, that he must rise from the  
dead.

The disciples therefore went away again to their 10  
own home. And Mary was standing by the sepul- 11  
chre without, weeping. So, as she wept, she stooped  
down into the sepulchre, and beholds two angels in 12  
white, sitting the one at the head and the other at  
the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. And 13  
they say to her : Woman, why weepest thou ? She  
says to them, Because they have taken away my  
Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

Having said this, she turned back and beholds 14  
Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.  
Jesus says to her : Woman, why weepest thou ? 15  
Whom dost thou seek ? She, supposing that it was  
the gardener, says to him : Sir, if thou hast borne  
him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I  
will take him away. Jesus says to her : Mary ! She 16  
turning says to him in Hebrew : Rabboni ! (which is  
to say, Teacher !) Jesus says to her : Touch me not ; 17  
for I have not yet ascended to my Father ; but go  
to my brethren, and say to them : I ascend to my

## JOHN.

Father and your Father, and my God and your God.

18 Mary the Magdalene comes bringing word to the disciples, that she has seen the Lord, and that he spake these things to her.

19 When therefore it was evening on that day, the first day of the week, and the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in the midst; and he says to them: Peace be to you. And having said this, he shewed them his hands and his side. The disciples therefore rejoiced when they saw the Lord.

21 Jesus therefore said to them again: Peace be to you. As the Father has sent me, so send I you.

22 And having said this, he breathed on them, and says to them: Receive the Holy Spirit. Whosoever sins ye remit, they are remitted to them; and whosoever ye retain, they are retained.

24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore said to him, We have seen the Lord. But he said to them: Except I see in his hands the print of the nails, and thrust my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe,

26 And after eight days, again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. Jesus comes, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said: Peace be to you. After that, he says to Thomas: Reach hither thy finger, and see my hands;

## CHAPTER XXI.

and reach thy hand, and thrust it into my side ;  
and be not faithless, but believing. Thomas an- 28  
swered and said to him : My Lord and my God.  
Jesus says to him : Because thou hast seen me, thou 29  
hast believed. Happy they that have not seen and  
have believed !

Many other signs also did Jesus in the presence 30  
of his disciples, which are not written in this book.  
But these are written, that ye might believe that 31  
Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that believ-  
ing ye might have life in his name.

XXI. AFTER these things Jesus manifested him- 1  
self again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias ;  
and he manifested himself in this manner.

There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas 2  
called Didymus, and Nathanael from Cana of Gal-  
ilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two others of his  
disciples. Simon Peter says to them, I go a fish- 3  
ing. They say to him, We also go with thee. They  
went forth, and entered into the ship ; and in that  
night they caught nothing.

But when morning was now come, Jesus stood on 4  
the beach ; yet the disciples knew not that it was  
Jesus. Jesus therefore says to them : Children, have 5  
ye anything to eat ? They answered him, No. And 6  
he said to them : Cast the net on the right side of  
the ship, and ye shall find. They cast it therefore ;



